

Tears Are Also Prayers

Isililo



**Author
Keabetswe Mahlaba**

PROLOGUE

Dikeledi

Where is God when you need him ? Does he even listen ? Or maybe he has his favourites

Every night my daily question is , what kind does he answer ?

Is there something wrong with me ? Maybe
I'm not enough for him

I never wish for night to come , that's when
I live my daily nightmare

Everyday it keeps getting worse , I've
prayed and I'm tired

I've cried and tears have dried , I've begged
and I'm tired

I'm living a nightmare , and I don't see a
way out . Who will get me out of this ? If
God himself is not doing anything

I'm cuddled up like a foetus , the door slowly opens making those cracks

But as always he's too careful to make sure, it's not loud to wake everyone

But I think they know , but no one cares . He removes the blankets off of me

I'm already in tears , he roughly takes my nightdress off

He gets on the bed and parts my legs , without a care in the world . He's already naked , he puts his hand over my mouth

I close my eyes a slap lands on my cheek ,
this is everyday life but I'll never get used to
living like this

I open my eyes and look at him , he's happy
now . That's what he wants

For me to look him in the eye , when he
violates me and has his way with me

He's ignorant to my tears as always , he
shoves his dick inside of me

And it doesn't matter how many times he
does this , the pain that he always gives me
is unbearable

A few rough thrusts , that will end up in me bleeding . He just wants to get me wet so he can enjoy himself

I hate myself more than I hate him , it's not everyday that I'm dry

Some days I do get wet , I don't get how my body can betray me like that

But it does , and when he's done he'll mock me for it

And force me to say how much I enjoyed him , to tell him in detail how I felt the pleasure

He's broken me physically and emotionally

I've forgotten myself , and he chokes me to
bring me back to what he's doing

Most days I always trail my mind away , so
it doesn't haunt me much

I get nightmares even during the day , a
mere simple touch always triggers me

He's groaning and sweating on top of me , I
feel so filthy right now

No amount of scrubbing or bathing will ever
make me clean

His face disgusts me to the core , the
pleasure that he experiences when he cums

Like he's doing right down , he waits to calm
down first

He gets off me , and walks out with the
biggest grin ever

I sink down to the floor with a pillow , it
rests on my knees . I bury my face on the
pillow

I don't have words to utter anymore . Must
I say this is also Gods will ? To take my
parents and put me under such misery

At the hands of someone who's supposed to be my protector

Someone who's meant to care and look after me . He's the very same monster that's hurting and has destroyed me

Is it also Gods will ?

To be violated every single night , by the one man in my life who shouldn't even be looking at me in this manner

If this is what people mean when they say , intando ka thixo ib'hlungu (God's will is painful)

Then I couldn't agree more

-
-
-

Princess

I wake up dripping wet , I'm literally
drenched in water

Even the sheets are wet , there's nothing
that's dry on this bed

I don't even remember what happened , my mind is completely blank

The door opens , and it's Prince one look at me and he's worried

Me : I'm okay

He says nothing but removes the sheets from me

Prince : bath or shower ?

After this , I want nothing to do with showers

Me : a bath please

He nods

Prince : get up take those off , you'll catch a cold

He walks to the bathroom and I get off the bed , take my night ware off

I take a towel and wrap around myself , I sit down on the couch

I battle with my mind trying to remember what happened

But nothing comes to mind , I'm so blank
and so confused

Worse it's like my brain is empty , nothing
useful comes to it

He comes out of the bathroom

Me : please don't tell anyone

I'm begging him , because I know only he
won't pressure me with trying to remember

Prince : okay , go bath we can't be late for
school

I smile , that's my way of thanking him . For saying he won't say anything

I get up walk to the bathroom , I take just a short bath

When I'm done I dry and lotion , walk back to the bedroom

He's gone , the bed is made sheets changed. And my uniform laid out on the bed

I don't even know why I have a maiden , when I have a brother who does everything for me like this

I get dressed , I wish I could wear pants .
But I guess today is not the day

When I'm done I take my school bag , and
head to the dinning quarter

Me : my king , my queen

I kiss both their cheeks , and I sit down

Dad : you didn't greet your brother princess

I laugh

Me : but I saw him

Mom : he was in your chamber again ?
Doing duties that are not his

We laugh , I have one amazing relationship
with both my brother's

And I'm older than Prince , with 5 minutes
that is

But they both treat me like I'm a child , and
I don't mind that

But that's all soon to change , see the
queen is expecting . Like 18 years later ,
they be like let's embarrass our kids and
have a child

Parents will disappoint you , but we're all so excited for a new addition to the family

Me : I think now we get stop the whole having maiden thing

I say dishing up for myself

Mom : but why ?

Me : my queen , you just said

Prince : I don't get paid to look after you
Princess

Dad : but you love doing so

Prince : and she shouldn't take advantage
of that my king

He's being strange right now

Mom : Princess

Me : my queen

Mom : we're keeping your maiden

Me : yes mother

I focus on my food , first days of school are
never a favourite to me

And now we're on the last term , we'll be done with high school

I can't wait , and I feel like the holidays were somehow cut short

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I couldn't sleep on the bed , so like most nights I'll sleep sitting on the floor like that

Or I'll lay down right on the floor , and
that's how I'll sleep

Because I can't bare to bring myself to sleep
on the bed

I get up from the floor , make the bed . I
have a bucket of water I keep in my hut

I take it pour water in the basin , it's cold
water . I'm just grateful it's not winter . But
it doesn't matter anymore , I've gotten used
to it

I take a bath , dry and lotion . Put on my
school t-shirt , tracksuit and sneakers

I pack my books and take my bag , I walk
into the house

I greet and they all greet back , it's a normal
morning for everyone , they're just laughing
and enjoying their conversation

And I can't stand any of them right now , if I
had means I'd kill them one by one

And they'll all sure a very painful death , a
slow painful death

The happy family sight repulse's me to the
core

Me : goodbye

I walk out before they even say anything ,
it's quite a long walk to the school

But I make it just in time always , and it
does me good . Clears my mind

So that by the time I arrive there , I'm one
happy soul . You'll have no reason not to
believe that all is not so good

She's already waiting for me by the gate , I
fail to understand why she's in the same
school as us all

When she can be in Durban , you know in a city at some fancy school

Princess : you're late

She says laughing engulfing me a tight hug

Me : you're early

We laugh and pull out of the hug

Princess : I....

My face catches her eye , I really couldn't hide the slap mark with anything

Princess : he did this didn't he ?

Me : no

Princess : stop protecting him

What does she know ? Nothing , because I never tell her anything

It's always just these suspicions she has

Princess : you don't have to do this , I can help....

Me : just stop it

I raise my voice very aggressive

Me : I'm sorry

She sighs and holds my hand , she's very affectionate like that . I've gotten used to it

Just know when she's not as affectionate something is wrong with her

Princess : no I'm sorry please forgive me

Me : forgive me and I forgive you

She smiles , I know we're good now . We walk through the school gate

Princess : you know it's our birthday weekend right ?

Me : yes

Princess : now you're coming

Me : as if I have a choice

She laughs

Princess : see Prince and I we're still deciding what we want

Me : you have a week left and you're still thinking ?

Princess : don't point out the obvious , we'll think of something

Me : why are you lying ? Prince will probably want nothing , and you'll just want to be spoiled

She puts her hand on her cheek , we both know I'm right

.
. .
. . .

INSERT 01

Princess



It always pains me to see Ledi this way , but my friend is one who person with two personalities

The Ledi that's broken and hurt , and the Ledi that's always laughing and smiling in front of everyone

I never want to push too hard , because then I might just loose a friend

The mere fact that I'm a princess , not many kids want to befriend me

That's why I care and love her so much , she didn't care that I'm a princess

And she certainly doesn't treat me like royalty , but just a friend to her

I don't know much about her life in detail , because she's too closed off

Anything personal , she hardly ever discloses . And I respect that

Because I have my own demons I deal with , always strange things happening every time I'm asleep

And I can't say it's dreams because I always feel them , like I experience them physically

The problem always is that when I wake up ,
I remember nothing

My mind is blank , and I can't think of
anything . I'm just with a blank mind

I'm even scared to talk to my parents about
this , not because of what they'll say

But I don't want to be associated with
anything that's not natural

And I can safely say , what's going on with
me is not normal at all

Prince : what has you thinking so hard ?

He sits next to me , and we share his pack of chips

Me : what are we doing weekend ?

Prince : I'm doing nothing

Sometimes I think my friend can see the future

Prince : why the sigh ?

Me : just that Ledi said you won't want anything , and here you are

He smiles , and that smile says a lot

Me : really ?

He chuckles with a smile

Prince : it's a crush , nothing to it

What a whole revelation , I never saw this one

Prince : don't look at me like that , I did not say I love her . Just that I have a crush

Me : yeah , yeah I got that but that's huge

Prince : and keep your mouth shut , besides there's no way I'll date your friend

Me : don't give me that , she can be my twin sister in-law and we'll be tied forever

He laughs making me feel like an idiot

Prince : I have a girlfriend so hold your horses

He's dating the school bitch

Me : I don't like her

Prince : and no one likes her , so nothing new there

Me : pity , but it's cute that you have a crush on Ledi

Prince : and it's just a crush

Me : but how do you have a crush on someone , while you have a girlfriend ?

Prince : you need a whole lot of schooling

Me : is that so ?

I have no boyfriend , never had one . But doesn't mean I'm clueless . Most guys at school are intimidated by me , so they stay away

And as for the prince's we meet once in a while , they just think too highly of themselves

Prince : keep your month shut

He gets up leaving , and I just laugh . They would make a great couple

Just that my friend is too fragile in a way , and my brother is too down

They won't compliment each other very well , she needs someone who is strong . Not too rough nor harsh , but not gentle either

Someone like my big brother , but Ty would roll dead before he dates village girls

He has one girlfriend from the city , on of two many

And she's a whole fake slay queen , but we don't judge right

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

It's always a struggle for me when I have to go home

For years I've always occupied my family home in Cape town

I hate going to Manzini , anything that has to do with being royal I hate it

I don't want the throne , I hope when the time comes and my father steps down

Prince will step up , and lead . Because that's just not me

I don't know that life and I don't want to invest myself much into it . I lived there for about 6 years , and I moved to the states to be with my grandfather

May his soul continue to rest in peace

The village life is just not for me , I don't see myself settling in such a place

From time to time I do go home , because I don't want to be too excluded from my family

My life is being in Cape town , being a thug .
Now that's what I do best

Sambulo walks in , and pours himself a glass of whiskey . We've been friends since childhood , over a girl . And that just made us weird

It's mostly women who become friends
after sharing a man

We did not share Kea , but I thought I was
going to marry that girl

Yes we were only in preschool , but there
was something there

Sambulo : need a glass ?

Me : I should start charging you for all this
alcohol you keep consuming here

He laughs sitting down

Sambulo : you don't pay me enough

Me : the hell I don't

Sambulo : but I still do my job very well ,
and so we got all the guns

Me : keep them , Jase will come get them
sometime tomorrow

Sambulo : so soon ?

Me : I don't want those things anywhere
near me , especially with that Khoza after
me

My mother knows nothing about my life ,
she just thinks I'm on the straight and
narrow

Working at my father's company , but I just
do that for her sake

And to repay myself for going years to
varsity for a fucking education , I don't even
need

It's like paying our parents as well , for
taking us to good expensive schools

That we never even asked , but one can't be
ungrateful right

So a 9 to 5 is a thank you to them , and what I do after that has nothing to do with them

My father is very much well aware of what I do , which led me to finding out about his own life

Before he went on to be king , and go straight . But I have this personal belief that

If you've ever gone skew even once , you never go narrow completely

Sambulo : don't you just want me to take him out ?

Me : I kill Khoza , everyone will know it was me . I'm still fine for now , the Ghanaians are going their job very well . I oversee they're well taken care of , and I call they answer

Sambulo : noted , but it would really be nice to kill him

That would give me great joy and pleasure

Me : he's not FBI nor Interpol , he's just SAPS

He laughs

Me : our country's justice department is a joke

Sambulo : let him chase

That's exactly what I'm letting him do , it's not like he'll never catch me

One thing about me is that I never slip up , I don't fuck up and I make no mistakes

.

.

.

.

Princess

With just few days left for our birthday ,
two to be exact

And Prince saying he wants to do nothing ,
I'm out of ideas

I don't know what to do , I don't want a
party that one is for sure

I want to be spoilt , but I don't know how .

Dad : it's the big 18

Me : my king , don't remind us that we're
getting old

They laugh , we just had supper . And now it's family time

Mom : 18 is a very special age for one

Me : that you become an adult my queen , and you starting to have responsibilities . If you think about it , it's really not that special

Dad : you're a princess , you've had responsibilities since you were 10

He just finishes me , because those were forced . We got to spend time with the village kids , do fun things with them

It was great I won't lie , but I never liked any of it . But our parents were like , they're teaching us that just because we're royalty

It doesn't make us any better than everyone else , and we got that

Mom : just embrace it , you'll love it my love .

I doubt I will , but I can't turn the clock back

Mom : so what will you be doing ?

Me : I don't know what I want

Mom : how about you Prince ?

Prince : can I have a few friends over ?

What now ! See the shock on my face , my jaw dropped

He's the same person who said he's not doing anything , it was just yesterday

Dad : what did we miss ?

Me : Prince said he doesn't want to do anything

And everyone laughs at me , now I'm sad

Mom : but you know your brother

Me : my queen he's just not nice

Prince : I'm sure you want girly stuff things ,
I don't want that

Me : but

Even I don't know what to say

Mom : I tell you what , how about I take you
to Durban for the whole weekend . You'll
leave Friday after school , and come back
Sunday afternoon ? So shopping , stay at a
fancy hotel . Just have fun

That would be amazing honestly

Me : can I invite a friend ?

Mom : just one ?

Me : I don't have many

Mom : it's okay sweetheart , of course you can invite your friend

I'm sure she's going to love this , we'll have fun in Durban together . And Prince can stay here at the palace with his friends , doing his grown adult things that are not girly

Me : thank you my queen

She smiles , and I can't wait for the weekend . I hope Ledi can get away and come with me

.

.

.

Tyler

I don't want war , so I have to go home today . I can't miss the twins birthday . My kids are all grown now , I didn't even buy presents

I'll rather they tell me what they want , I'll give them money so they can buy for themselves

Jase : this is good

Me : you don't want me to feel insulted

Jase : never , you always deliver otherwise you wouldn't be who you are

Me : let's leave it there , make sure those guns reach Mexico in time . You don't want to give us a bad name

Jase : got it

My phone rings and it's the Prince

Me : excuse yourself

He walks out , I answer the call

Me : Manzini

Prince : tell me you're coming

Me : I am

Prince : I need you to bail me

Me : on ?

Prince : I asked to have friends over at the palace and the parents agreed

Me : but that's not what you want

Prince : so please talk to them

He said to me he wants to go to Musgrave , now he's shocking me

If this boy wasn't a fucker , I'd think he's gay

Me : you'll go to Musgrave , I don't get why lie in the first place

Prince : I don't want Princess where I am

I chuckle , it's just sibling rivalry nothing
much to it . There's no hate none
whatsoever

Me : fine

Prince : thank you , now don't miss your
flight

As if I can make that mistake , they'll hate
me . We hang up

I make a call , to someone back there
because I can't starve . I don't do feelings , I
don't even know how to catch those . I
think I just have a lovers heart , but I lack to
show that

Relationships are there , only because the women think it's one

From my side it's never a relationship but just a fuck and nothing else

Enhle : baby

Me : how are you ?

Enhle : I'm not good baby , I miss you

Me : aren't you just in luck , I'm coming so any chance to see you tomorrow

She squeals , and it's so childish for a first year student at university

Enhle : but why not today ?

Me : I just said I'm arriving , so you're not family . Don't regard yourself that high , I can never see you first before then

Enhle : don't be so harsh Ty , it's fine I get it.
I'll see you tomorrow

Me : good , I have to go now

Enhle : I love you

Me : me too

I take a sigh and drop the call , you'll never catch me saying those words like ever

Unless it's to my sister and my mother , that's where it ends

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Thato walks in , he's just coming back from work

And I've planned it all out , I'm not sleeping
here tonight

I'll go to the river or sleep at the veld
anywhere but in this house

Rose : you're back early today

Thato : hi my love

And they just kiss right here in front of me
as if I'm not here

Rose : the child

She says laughing a bit embarrassed , I don't get how she can refer to me as a child

When she lets her husband rape me so brutal every night

She can't tell me she doesn't know , doesn't she feel when he leaves their room ?

Doesn't she wonder where he is for those minutes close to an hour ?

Thato : sorry

He puts his bag down , and sits

Thato : how are you Dikeledi ?

I just shrug my shoulders

Thato : what did you do to her ?

He asks his wife , with an aggressive tone

Rose : I did nothing

Thato : then are you two fighting ?

Rose : what reason do I have to fight with her ?

He looks at me for a bit , and I wish I can just gawk his eyes out

Thato : then why is she like this ?

Acting like he cares , these two are just sick

Rose : your sister is in one of her moods , maybe she got dumped who knows

She says getting up walking to the kitchen

Thato : you have a boyfriend ?

He's still aggressive , I say nothing . I get up he's quick to grab my arm

I feel the grip on my wrist , it's surely going to leave a mark

Thato : I will mess you up so bad , if a dare find out you're whoering out there

The way he tames me , the power he has over me already I'm crying

He holds my chin making me face him roughly , he's hurting my jaw

Thato : no one will have you except me

He lets go roughly of my arm , I gather myself and walk out

As soon as I'm out I run , not even knowing
where I'm going

We live in the out skirts at the village , far
from the village closer to the kingdom

There's only few homes near us , a lot of
people are at the inner village

I find myself at the hill top , I sit down on
the rock and scream my lungs out

As if it eases the pain , only I feel every
emotion physically

Me : God this hurts , please make it stop

This is useless , I don't even know why I bother . Because it's like he doesn't even hear me

Maybe I'm doing this wrong , or my words are not the right words

How can my own brother do this to me ?

Life was all fine living with my mother eMlazi , we didn't have much

But it was home , it was warm there was love . My father lived his own life with his family

We knew him , he saw us once in a while .
He passed on as well , but I wasn't even
bothered

I still had my mother , the only parent who
was all to me .

I don't understand why she had to die , my
brother was just too happy to take me in

Only to turn me into his wife , it started by
him walking into my room without knocking

And he would tell me it's his house , he saw
naked a few times because of that . I
started locking the door , the beating
started

But I didn't stop , he would starve me for days . Sometimes weeks as punishment for locking the door

One night he came into my room , and since then it has been a norm

My very own flesh and blood took my innocence , and ever since then I'm his object to pleasure himself with

.

.

.

INSERT 02

Dikeledi

Dikeledi



It's getting dark now , I know I said I won't sleep in that house today

But the cold is not having any mercy on me at all

I get up and start walking , having no idea where I'm headed

The wind is blowing very bad , and I'm wearing any jersey

But can I not be violated today , is that too much to ask for ? As damaged goods as I am, I want this to stop . I don't like it , and I don't want it

I keep walking , and the darker it keeps getting . I don't want to go back there

Now I'm scared , this is not safe . I might just be eaten by some wild animal

But wouldn't that be better ? What I'm leaving is not life at all

And I know there will be consequences when I go back

If I run away where will I end up ? I have no one . My father's family wants nothing to do with us

Because he left us , and made a family with another woman . Now they want nothing to do with us , because they believe we weren't his kids

Which isn't truth , he was just a man being a man . Chasing a new younger fresh skirt nothing to it

I'm at the fence , that goes out of the kingdom

Me : where am I going ?

This is why I haven't tried running away , because where will I go ?

Me : I have school , just a month and few weeks . I've endured this for a year , can't I just hold on for a bit ? Just until I'm done with school

The run back to the outskirts start again , I'm heading towards the main road

Leading from Durban , there's no way I'll run in the veld again

I might just get attacked on these bushes

A bit further I start seeing light , bright lights like that of a car

I pick up my face and run faster , heading
towards the late

It's only when I'm near I see that it's a car ,
one coming at a very high speed

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

I came bearing gifts , because I missed my
flight yes

And now I have a debt to settle , because
they were expecting me earlier than this

And I'm in a hurry , I hate driving at night .
Had Sambulo not had an emergency
needing him

He would have come along , but he couldn't
so I'm all alone

My eyes wouldn't deceive me like this ,
something is running heading towards the
car

I hit the breaks to avoid hitting the person ,
but a shadow comes out of nowhere
pushing her over to the other side

I still the car abruptly , and run out to check on the person

And it's a girl , almost the same age as my sister . She's hit a rock and is bleeding a bit on her forehead

This is why I hate coming here , there are ghosts in such places

Where did the shadow come from , because it's not here now

I pick her up , she seems to be out of it . I lay her on the back seat

I take my seat and drive . This is just great I should be getting home

But I have to drive back to Durban , I can't take her to the village

I don't even know where she was running to . I just hope I don't have a nutcase in my hands

A whole suicidal person

I go to Grace hospital it's the closest , I run inside with her in my arms . And they're quick to help me , but for hours no one is telling me anything

Because I'm not family I know nothing
about her , I wait around

Because I can't just leave her here , what if
she dies

As much as I know I didn't hit her , that
shadow pushed her aside

She must have bit her forehead , when she
was bring thrown , but I still feel responsible

I'm tired of waiting around , I end up using
the prince title . That one always works
better , as the nurse goes to call the doctor
for me

I take my phone and make a call my mother, she's too dramatic but I can only call her

Mom : Ty where are you ?

She's crying , I'm telling you it's the pregnancy

Me : I'm at the hospital I....

Mom : which hospital ? What happened , baby are you okay ? Africa my son is in hospital

Why is she going crazy ?

Me : calm down , I'm fine

Mom : fine but you're in a hospital Tyler

Okay she's shouting now

Me : because I hit someone

Mom : oh no you can't go to prison

What !

Me : she's okay , I'm not going to prison

Mom : I'm coming there tell me where you are , I'm coming there

Dad : give me that phone , you're not going anywhere

Mom : my son is....

Dad : he's your son we get that , now give me that phone

He's trying to be the voice of reason , and it won't end well for him

Me : mommy I love you okay , tell the twins I'll see them tomorrow

Mom : Tyler

Dad : just let him be

Mom : stop interrupting me

I end up laughing , my mother is being a lot right now

Mon : you're laughing , so you're really okay?

Me : yes kaManzini I'm okay

Mom : okay that girl shouldn't die

She drops the call on me , talk about being rude

Doc : my prince I....

I lift my eyes and look at him

Me : take me to her now

He looks at me lost

Me : did you not hear me , maybe I wasn't loud or clear enough ?

He clears his throat

Doc : please follow me

Me : how about you just tell me where she is , I follow no one . But you can follow me there

He stands still , I put my hand on his shoulder

Me : is there a problem with your hearing ?

He frowns

Doc : no

Me : I'm listening

Doc : she's....she's on the second floor ward
07

Me : that wasn't fucking hard

I leave him there , and go to the ward . She
has a patch on the forehead

She's not alone in the ward but with
another guy

Doc : she suffered

I take the file from him and look at it

Me : you really followed me

He looks at me dumb fold

Me : there was no need to , I can read

Doc : I see that

Me : when are you discharging her ?

Doc : she has to regain consciousness first

She's barely hurt , besides the bleeding that was of the forehead she's fine

Me : give me prescription , I'm taking her we're leaving

Doc : my prin....

Me : stop with that nonsense do your job

Doc : please just listen she may look fine ,
but we need to make tests once she's
awake

Me : I'm no doctor , but I'm not stupid as
you are . Now get on with it

He shakes his head

Doc : you'll have to sign a consent form ,
that if anything happens to her out there .

Not me nor the hospital can be held
accountable

Me : you're still here ?

He walks out , like a wet chicken . I'm not
spending the night at an hospital because of
an unconscious person

- .
- .
- .

Princess

I'm being dragged through a dry veld , even
the grass is dry and hard

It's hurting me , leaving scratches
everywhere on my body

Some of those even bleed a but , I'm just
crying and begging this person to leave me
alone

Judging by the strength and scent , it's a
man . But he's not familiar

My chest is closing up , I keep coughing
hoping I can be able to breathe

Me : please stop... you're hurting me....
You're hurting meplease stop

I keep repeating those words over and over
again

Me : I'm sorry

I wail , and I feel like I'm apologizing for
something I don't know right now

I'm apologizing for someone to leave me ,
so he doesn't stop me

But I haven't done anything wrong to this
person

Me : please....

I'm begging , but it's no use . He's just dragging me , and I have no idea where to

Voice : Princess snap out of it

He's shouting , and that's a familiar voice .
It's my brother

I lift my head and let the breath I've been holding out

He just engulfs me and I cry , letting all this pain I'm feeling inside of me out

I don't even know why I'm feeling so much pain , I don't remember what was happening

Prince : it's okay I'm here

It takes a while for me to be okay

Prince : you don't remember ?

I shake my head no , I try to think but still nothing

I groan frustrated , my mind is blank again .
I remember nothing as always

Prince : calm down

Me : why can't I remember ?

Prince : I don't know but , maybe try to relax

Me : I'm always relaxed Prince

Prince : don't bite my head off , I'm trying to help you

Me : ngiyaxolisa Manzini (I'm sorry)

Prince : it's okay I understand

Me : let's get ready for school

He nods , and at least today I'm not
drenched

Prince : should I help you ?

Me : I can manage

He gets up

Prince : suit yourself

He walks out , I laugh at his reaction . That
was just so unnecessary

Someone is sulking this morning , because our brother was supposed to arrive yesterday but he didn't

That's the only reason why Prince would be like that

But he will be fine , our birthday is tomorrow . And I haven't even asked Ledi to come with

But I will do so , as soon as we arrive at school

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

Tyler



I came with that girl here , slept with her on my bed in my chamber

I kept my distance , kept my side . I don't believe in sleeping beauties

I'll rather she wakes up and I'll get to see her better then

No one knows she's here , even now she's still out of it

I just hope that shadow didn't do anything to her , unlike my father and mother . I'm nothing special , I know nothing about these supernatural things

I don't have those , so I can't even see anything . Right now I'm just on hope that she's okay , and will wake up soon

I arrived late , right after midnight . There was no way that I was going to wake everyone

I walk in the dinning chamber , and the giggle that welcomes me warms my heart

Me : hello to you too

She laughs

Princess : I missed you

Me : right , and you're eating not even giving me a hug

Princess : you're my ride today , isn't just that amazing ?

Me : no....

Everyone walks in , and the worry on Prince's face disappears

He really needs me , I don't get why did he lie in the first place

Dad : my prince

Me : not that dad please no

Mom laughs

Mom : I won't come to you

If my father ever gets my mother pregnant again , I swear I'll hate him for dear life

Me : my queen

Mom : I will post you back , to where you come form Tyler

Me : sorry mommy

The two devils laughs , I ignore them and give my mother a hug . Which she gladly returns

We all sit down

Prince : I thought you weren't going to miss your flight ?

Me : and I did

Princess : but you're here now

Me : and that's all that matters my princess

Prince : stop doing that , you're still going to get whatever you want . No need for that

We laugh

Me : and what do you want ?

Princess : I really don't know , but mommy is taking me and my friend to Durban

Me : that's nice , and you how about a boy's thing at Musgrave ?

He looks down , like a whole worried person

Prince : I was hoping to have it here

He says so smooth

Me : on your 18th birthday , now ways .
Musgrave is where you're headed

Prince : if you say so Manzini , it really
doesn't matter to me

This boy can act , I give it to him

Mom : are you paying for that ?

Me : with what money ? Did your husband
tell you payments are late this month ?

I don't flaunt money when it comes to my mother

Which is why I still at our family home , I can't have her being suspicious of my deeds

Mom : so who's paying for Musgrave ?

Me : whoever is paying for Durban

She laughs

Mom : hold your son Africa , before I finish with him

Shouldn't he be holding her ?

Me : my princess finish so we can leave

Prince : can I catch a ride ?

Princess : Prince why must you ?

She's already on her feet , grabbing my car keys . She kisses the parents and walks out

Prince : you'll swear she even knows how to drive

With these two it never ends , he leaves as well

Mom : what happened to the hit girl ?

Dad burst out laughing , and I get why . My mother has no idea how what she said sounds like right now

Me : the hit girl ?

Mom : don't make me an idiot , the girl you hit

Me : oh that girl , well she's fine mommy . Just a bleeding on the forehead but she's fine

I get up because I'm not about to tell them she's right here . And I better hurry from dropping the twins off , so I can be here when she wakes up

Mom : you really didn't kill her ?

This woman , her facial expression is killing me

Me : no

I walk towards the door , and I remember something I turn back

Me : and I really didn't hit that girl , there was a shadow there that moved her out of the way

Their eyes , but I don't want to read much into that . It could be just pure shock

Me : I'm gone , but I'm certain there's
ghosts in this Kingdom of yours . Maybe you
should cleanse it

What do I know about that ? Nothing

But mom used to give dad hell about those
cleansing things

-
-
-
-

Princess

I am really bummed that Ledi wasn't at school , and it's so unlike her

My friend hardly ever misses school , no matter how sick she is

This has me worried , and her home is so far. I can't walk there

Our brother had to go to the city , so he was just in a hurry to drop us home and he left

Mom : you don't look okay

She sits next to me , she can pop any day .
Her belly is so huge

Me : Ledi wasn't at school today , I'm a bit worried about her my queen

Mom : do you have a reason to be worried?

Me : I don't know my queen , I think something is very wrong with her

Mom : isn't your friend , Thato's sister ?

Why am I so slow ?

Me : she is

Mom : Thato is here at work , so go ask him

Me : thank you my queen

Of course that idiot works here , as a post guard . Why didn't I think about this ?

As much as I don't like him , and I think he hits Ledi . It's worth a try asking him

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I come to , I'm in a strange room . Fancy sheets , like everything smells expensive

I can't help to notice that it looks like the
palace chambers

And it smells muscular in here , so this room
belongs to a man

But who ?

I get off the bed my head is pounding like
I've been hit by a brick

I go dizzy for a few seconds and that forces
me to sit back down

I'm still wearing my clothes , besides the
pounding head . The patch on my forehead

I feel fine , and I'm okay down there . I don't feel any pain , like I've been penetrated

A note and a tray catches my eye on the night stand

I take the note and read it

Me : "don't run , eat bath find clothes in the closet . DON'T RUN"

Strange , that don't run was so commanding. I even fear the person who write this . I head to the door and its not locked , okay so I'm not being kept a prisoner

I close the door and slowly force myself to make the bed

When I'm done , I seek the bathroom and take the bath

Using these male lotions , but it's fine . And somehow I love the scent of it

When I'm down I head to the closet , and it's mostly casual clothes

I grab a black hoodie and grey sweatpants , with a black t-shirt . A size 28 I'm a 30 so it's not that bad , the pants are a tight fit bit it's fine

I devour the food , like I haven't eaten in days . When I'm done , I'm lost what to do now

I remember I ran away from home , that was surely yesterday right ?

And when I reached the fence , I thought about school and I ran towards the main road

The lights , that was a car . I ran towards it , but did I get there ?

I remember nothing after that , and this patch on my forehead

I'll go crazy trying to figure out what happened , I walk out and I'm really at the palace

Voice : Ledi

I look where the voice is coming from and it's Prince

Prince : uhm hi

Me : hi

I don't do that my prince , my princess thing with them like never

Prince : whatwhat are you doing here ?

Isn't that funny , considering that Princess is my friend ?

But right now I also don't know why I'm here , or what I'm doing here

I don't even know how I got here to even begin with

Me : I don't know

Prince : is everything okay ?

Me : dude I don't know

He smiles , just flaunting this cuteness at me

Prince : okay , don't kill me . You're very strange , and seems like you have memory loss . How about we go get something to drink ?

Me : okay maybe we should

He tries to touch me I move back

Prince : okay sorry , my bad

Me : it's okay , just don't do that

Prince : right got it

We leave going to the kitchen

.

.

.

INSERT 03

Princess

I finally found Thato , he was actually out .
So it took a bit of time to locate him

Me : Mr Moloji , can we have a word ?

He looks at me , and I don't like him . But
now I'll just tolerate him

Thato : my princess , what can I do for you ?

Me : nothing actually , I just need to ask
about Ledi

His body language , says a lot

Thato : yes

Me : she wasn't at school today , I'm just worried she's never missed school

He laughs nervously

Thando : oh , she's not feeling well at all . So she's home

Me : oh

Thando : yes my princess , it's embarrassing to say this . But mother nature has visited her

Such lies , one thing I know about my friend is that she's a late bloomer

Even now at 18 she still hasn't had her periods , I know the shock right

Me : I see

Thato : I'll tell her you asked

Me : okay

I turn and leave him , I need to get a driver to take me there . And now is the best time because he's here. He just lied to me . Now I have reason to believe that Ledi is not home , or he's beaten her. Or the worst he doesn't even know where she is , Thando looks very capable of anything

Prince



There's just something about Dikeledi that I can't just explain . There's that brokenness , there's the fierceness .

A whole force to be reckoned with

I look at her and I see a whole younger version of my mother

The man who will get to have her as his wife, will be blessed truly

Me : here you go

Ledi : thank you

I join her and sit down , I can't take my eyes off of her

She's even becoming uncomfortable , I hope she doesn't take this bad

But I'm one person , who just keeps quite and observe

Ledi : won't you have a drink ?

Me : no

Ledi : but you said....

Me : I know what I said

Ledi : don't interrupt me when I talk Prince
it's rude

Talk about being rude herself

Ledi : dude you're staring and it's creepy

Me : I'm anything but a creep

She shakes her head

Ledi : don't you have anything to talk
about?

Talk about being bold

Me : not really , but how about you just tell me about yourself

Right now , I'm in a battle with my mind .
She's here , she has no idea how

And she's wearing Tyler's clothes , I don't want to think they're dating

Because that one has women all over , I'm sure everywhere he goes he has a girlfriend

Ledi : there's nothing to know about me , what about you besides being a prince and a whole ladies man

That is ruining my chances , that's if I ever stand a chance

Me : I'm anything but a ladies man

Ledi : so you say

Me : don't judge okay , I have reasons why I'm the way that I am

Ledi : don't we all ?

Me : see I just think I'm misunderstood

Ledi : for playing girls ?

Me : no , just that I long and seek a certain kind of love

Ledi : and what kind is that ?

Me : the kind that I see when I look at my parents

She nods

Me : that shit is rare , and so damn pure . Not to mention unique , that's what I long for . 18 years of marriage and I can't even point a single time where I saw them argue, or angry at each other . That love is beautiful , it's like saying even on bad days I still got you . I doubt they go to bed angry at

each other , that they shout over their own heads over anything . They love each other with perfections and imperfections . They're each other's strengths where the other lacks . It's a love that overlooks the past , and doesn't say this is where you have been . But it's saying let's go forward together , leave the shit of the past where it is . I want what my parents have if not more. Like we don't go out there roaming for love , because we see love and we know it. The kind that's pure and gentle , it's right here in front of us .

I chuckle

Me : everyone looks at me and they see a player , but I know what real love is . And do

you think any of the girls I've dated loved me ?

I look at her , she shrugs her shoulders

Me : they never , and even my current girlfriend doesn't love me . She loves the idea of me , a prince and that's it

Ledi : so you're with someone , and you know they don't love you . Why is that ?

Me : I'm passing time

Ledi : classic

I laugh

Me : I'm sure some guy as well is busy out there passing time with my future wife

Ledi : I hear you loud and clear

I take her glass and drink from it , she just looks at me

Me : so still nothing to tell about you ?

Ledi : unfortunately yes

Me : wow okay , we can't finish it all . Today it was me tomorrow it might be you

She gets up

Ledi : I should go

Me : we were still having fun

She smiles and it's the most beautiful thing ever

Ledi : like you said , today tomorrow so yeah

I laugh , she walks out . And my mind is back on the question

What is she with Tyler ?

Princess

I managed to get one of the drivers to drive me to the outskirts

I hope to be back in time before my father is back from Durban . He doesn't like it when we wander around

I knock at the door quite for a while , before Rose opens the door . We've met once or twice , she's so sweaty and reeks of sex .

But how because I left the husband back at the palace ? The shame she has on her face

Rose : Princess

Me : Mrs Moloji , hi

Rose : uhm hi , what do we ...uhm yes you here ?

She's stuttering so bad , busy fixing her gown . And who wears gowns at this time of the day ?

Me : is Ledi here ?

Rose : no

She doesn't even hesitate saying that ,
meaning she's really not here

Me : oh , she didn't come to school either

Rose : that child is going to send me to an
early grave like she did her parents

That's not a nice thing to say

Rose : she didn't sleep here , we have no
idea where she is . But between me and
you, she's with a boy

What is wrong with these people ? So my friend has disappeared and they don't even care

One said she's having periods , another is saying she's with a boyfriend

I'm not okay right now , and I'm actually getting upset . Something is brewing inside of me

Me : I'll take my leave

Rose : okay bye

She closes the door right in my face

Me : what is going on here ?

Now where do I even start to look for her ?

On my own I can't do this

I have to go home , and tell my parents
about this , they'll know what to do

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I want to leave now , as much as it was okay
to be lost and all

And not have Thato over me , pleasuring himself . I can't avoid that reality , I have to go back

Leaving Prince I came back to the chamber , our talk really shocked me

He's really matured for his age , and the way he was expressing the kind of love he wants

That was just amazing , and I wish for him to find that kind of love

As for me I don't even dream , what man will love a woman like me ?

Even I wouldn't love myself , I'm everything
that's damaged and broken

Just thinking about this causes me tears

I get up from the bed , and walk to the
door. I'm welcomed by a creation

I can't take my eyes off of him , for a whole
full minute I'm just hooked on him

Not even minding the girl with him , where
do they make them like this ?

And who is he ?

Him : you're blocking my way

The voice , my heart is sinking deep at the pit of my stomach . There's a funny movement in my tummy , my skin is having shivers all over

Me : sorry

Him : don't just say sorry , move along

And he's rude , but let's leave that . He's a whole man

I should be ashamed of myself , having such thoughts about a man

Shouldn't I despise his kind ? For everything that's happening to me right now . I move out of the way , the girl is looking at me like I'm something so disgusting

Her : Ty who is this ? What is she doing in your room , wearing your clothes ?

This is his room , and what kind of a name is Ty ?

Her : are you going to answer me or what ?

She's getting angry one , but the Ty is not paying attention to the tantrum . It's actually sad

Her : Tyler !

Oh now that's the Ty

Tyler : Enhle you're making noise , this is the place and not your dusty streets

I find myself laughing , and they both look at me

Me : sorry

Tyler : stop staying sorry it's annoying

Enhle : girl you're still here ? Do you have a death wish ?

She's coming at me right now , and why am I still here ?

Tyler : have you ever killed anyone ?

She's taken aback by that question , for one he looks like he's killed quite a lot

Me : I'm leaving

I walk out he follows me , and the girlfriend I assume calls after him

Tyler : what ?

Enhle : where are you going ? You can't bring me here , I find another girl in your room . And the nerve to even leave with her?

Me : he's not leaving with me

Tyler : is she talking to you ?

Why is he coming at me ? I did nothing

Nonhle : who is she ?

Tyler : she's nothing to you so fuck off , and raise your voice at me like that again

She opens her mouth to say something , but
cat caught her tongue

Tyler : Let's go

He says to me , and I don't think I want to
go anywhere with someone's boyfriend

Especially when I have looked at him in this
manner

And I still don't know how I got here

He tries to touch my hand I move back
quickly

The look he gives me , I gather myself fast .
But it's too late he's caught on to my
reaction

Tyler : let's go

Don't tell me again , of course at the back of
my head I'm saying

Not to his face , as I follow him and the
girlfriend slams the door

Someone is going to have it hard tonight

Voice : Dikeledi

A running Princess comes to us , I wasn't even aware it's her until she called out

Me : bunny

She laughs , crushing me with a hug

Princess : what are you doing here ? You missed school . I went to your home and Rose said you're with a boy , right after I asked Thato and he said you're having a cycle . That was a shocker to me because you don't have those

Wow yes say right in front of this gorgeous man that I'm not woman enough

Me : really ?

She looks at him, and smiles shyly

Princess : sorry , I kind of forgot about him .
And I was just so worried

Me : yeah I'm fine

Princess : did you come to see me ?

Me : I don't know , but I don't think so

She looks at me confused , but I'm confused
myself

Princess : what's going on ? And what happened to your forehead ?

Me : I don't know

Tyler : Princess can you just let her go , she'll tell you all when she sees you

Princess : she's with you ?

Tyler : yes

She pops her eyes and gives me on conniving look

Princess : okay then , tonight me and you
Durban my birthday for tomorrow we're
spending the weekend there . I will come
get you in two hours

Me : oh

Princess : I love you

She gives me a kiss cheek and leaves , will
Thato let me leave after the stunt I pulled ?

Tyler : let's go

And then there's this one , I need a hard
reality check right now

INSERT 04

Dikeledi

The whole way taking me home , he's quite just playing music . The girlfriend called a few times and he switched the phone off. I'm stealing glances at him , not enough to make him notice or realise though

Me : this is it

I point to my house , he says nothing but drives directly inside the yard

Me : dropping me off at the gate was going to be fine

Tyler : go get what you'll need , for your weekend thing

How does he enter there ? What's his thing

I get off the car and walk inside the house , I'm already shaking

Rose : you're back

Me : is my brother here ?

The pain it brings me to address him as a brother

Rose : he's still at work

Okay that's better

Rose : and who's car is that outside ?

Me : the royal driver

Rose : are you making me a fool ?

She can't know all of them now can she ?

Rose : were you at the palace , this whole time ?

Oh it's about that

Me : yes , and I know the princess came looking for me , she wasn't aware that I hurt myself . And so I had gone to the hospital

Rose : oh okay

Me : it's her birthday tomorrow , and she's asked me to go spend the weekend with her . That's why the driver is here

Rose : I don't see any problem with that

Great , say no more and I won't even take a lot of things

I don't want Thato fining me here , because he'll say no and I'll be so disappointed

.

.

.

Tyler

The reason why I decided to bring her back myself

Is because I saw how she reacted when I tried to touch her

And the way she was acting towards a stranger , it tells you even a close touch terrifies her

When I say a close touch , I mean like someone very close to her

She's being abused , I did say I'm not doctor. But the kind of life I lead

Will always make one come cross such situations

And every time , she'll look at herself .
Maybe to see if she's still decent or something

I'm driving back to the palace now , she was too quick to go in and out

Sending a driver , or for Princess to go fetch her would have been fine . But I wanted to bring her back myself

Me : why were you running at night in the veld , and almost jumping in front of my car?

She has that it was you look

Me : answer me

Ledi : II was at the hills and I got delayed.
By the time I realised it was late , it was
already getting dark . The man road was my
only way to make it faster

Me : you're lying

She keeps quite

Me : I didn't even hit you , because a
shadow pushed you out of the way . I took
you to the hospital, because of the bleeding

on your forehead

I won't lie to her

Ledi : thank you

She means it , and has her head bowed
down

I let her be , I don't want to bomber her

Going too hard might just make her run
away , and all I want is to bring her closer

She needs a gentle kind of love , one that's
genuine and soothing

We arrive at the palace , and Princess is ready to leave

As soon as she sees her friend she's already on her toes , not wasting any time

.

.

.

Princess

My brother is something else , now I wonder what's the deal with him

He was just being too extra nice towards Ledi , which is so unlike him

I wanted to talk to my mother , about the dreams but she was tired and I had to prepare myself to leave

Mom : behave there

Me : always my queen

She gives us both hugs , and my friend was just strange there

Her hug didn't even take a second , it was just way too quick

Dad : No alcohol there

We laugh

Me : we don't even drink

Mom : there's always first times for everything

Okay I've heard enough now , and we won't even be doing any of that . We say goodbye to everyone , and Tyler walks us to the car

Ledi gets in but he pulls me back to him , he closes the door . Clearly so she doesn't hear whatever he wants to say

Me : I'm lost

Tyler : here

He hands me his black card , the shock I
have right now

I didn't know he even had one , not that I
know everything about him

Tyler : I want you to spoil your friend there ,
take her shopping . Do whatever is that you
can do , to make her happy

Another shocker

Me : it's my birthday and not hers

Tyler : I'm well aware , but I just need you to cheer her up okay

Okay !

Me : okay , so limit maybe ?

I'm just trying him right now

Tyler : no , just make sure she's happy

Me : okay make her happy

Tyler : and don't be so sad because in a way, you're also being spoiled . And you're yet to still get your present

Me : it's okay this is not about me it's fine , it's about you impressing Ledi

Tyler : I'm not impressing anyone , this is just an ask

Me : can I ask ?

Tyler : I'm not your friend Princess , you don't get to ask me such things . Just have fun , cheer your friend . And please just show her some support

He's so losing me , but in a way I think I'm getting him

Me : okay

He opens the door for me I get in as well , and he closes it with a smile on his face

I wonder what's the deal with this ? These two are surely hiding something

-
-
-

Tyler

If I had other means I wouldn't have asked my sister to cheer her friend on her day

This weekend is supposed to be about her , bit her friend needs her

She needs someone to just burst and let it all out . She needs to open up on her own

But I fear that this rape thing is still happening even now , it's not a past trauma thing

She's living it now , seems like I need to have a talk with my sister so she can tell me better about her friend

If I'm right , and I believe I am . I will
confront this before I even leave

A sulking Enhle welcomes me

Enhle : wow Tyler like just wow

Me : just one foot inside the door

Enhle : but how can you disrespect me like
that babe ? And on front of her . Is she
heading to be my replacement ?

A replacement for what ? When she never
even got the post

Enhle : Ty I love you

Me : me too

She walks to me

Enhle : and her ?

Me : don't ask about her , she didn't
concern you .

Nonhle : okay just tell me this , are you
dating her ?

Me : I'm not dating anyone

Including her

Nonhle : okay babe but please don't let girls disrespect me like that

I'm still not getting the disrespect part

But I want her here all weekend , so I'll just go with whatever she says

-
-
-

INSERT 05

Prince

I'm going to Musgrave today , and it'll only be a afternoon thing . So I'll be here at the palace most of the day

Zamo has just woke me up , I don't even get why he's here this early

Me : sort you out with breakfast ?

Zamo : yeah

His mind is not here

Me : what's up ?

I take my t-shirt and put it on

Zamo : sorry to bother you man , it's just that those two are at it again

Those two being his parents , they just have a track record of being violent with each other

And you can't single out anyone , it's a thing they do both of them . Even his mother is violent towards his father

Sometimes the things our parents do , and
not realising the damage they're causing to
us

Me : stick around , until we leave later

I'll always have his back , because out of all
the guys we're much closer

Zamo : sure

I make the bed , my phone rings and it's
Soso my girlfriend I sigh Zamo laughs

Me : baby

Soso : happy birthday my love

The scream is so unnecessary

Me : thank you baby

Soso : I can't wait to see you later

She says with a seductive voice , and that only means one thing

Later she planned some crazy sex and nothing else , so yeah sex is a birthday present

Not that I was expecting any from her

Me : okay I can't wait

Soso : of course you can't , I love you okay
bye

Me : bye

Soso : don't you love me back ?

The expression on my face

Me : I love you back

Zamo doesn't hold himself , he laughs and
Soso hears it

Soso : so you're with your friends already
this early

Me : we were drinking last night , Zamo
slept over

Soso : oh okay then

Me : yeah bye babe

Soso : bye

She drops the call

Me : you're such an idiot

Zamo : why do you waste your time with this girl ? Because you know exactly who do you want

Me : and who I want doesn't want me

Zamo : come on , she told you that ?

Me : she was here yesterday , we had some talk and even after that... like nothing

It's a no secret to my friends how I feel about Ledi

Zamo : you're brave though to even try and persuade her , with all the rumours going

around

Me : not that again

Zamo : but it's there , we can't ignore it

So there's a rumour going on , from the outskirts where she stays . That she's a witch , of course I don't believe that shit

But apparently she's followed by a ghost , it is said that some prophet of some kind saw this shadow more than once following Ledi

Her brother was told , and they said he dismissed that talk

But I think Ledi has no idea what people are saying about her

Even Princess hasn't said anything , so clearly they haven't heard this rumour

It's not a thing guys out there as of yet , but in the corners there's whispers

.

.

.

Tyler

I get up and walk to the bathroom , I discard
of the condoms

You can never trust women when it comes
to such

And there's a saying that , if you're married
or you're just fooling around always take
the condom with you

Hence I don't take chances , the damn
things are full of my kids

Women are capable of such , they make
take these things and get themselves
pregnant

And it's a situation that occurred with Sambulo , all thanks to that he's a father now

Enhle : can I join you for a shower ?

She says when I get back to the bedroom

Me : I don't have sex in the shower Enhle , it's so fucking slippery and there's no chance of a condom in there

The look she gives me

Enhle : you know it won't hurt just for once, for us to explore each others bodies

Women will never cease to amaze you

Me : explore each others bodies , have you found some low life wanna be Kasi thug you're fucking with ? (Township)

Enhle : baby no , it was just a suggestion

Me : don't ever suggest anything to me , stick to your exploring shit out there . If I don't satisfy you my way , the door is never locked

Enhle : I....

Me : keep quite I'm making a call

I say taking my phone and calling Princess ,
the way she takes a while to answer .

They're still asleep

Princess : Manzini

Me : kaManzini , you're still asleep ?

Princess : yes , she was having bad
nightmares last night

Fuck , explains why she's whispering

Me : about ?

Princess : I couldn't make out anything she was saying , but at some point she was ever crying

Me : you think it's safe you're all there alone ?

Princess : it was a rough night I won't lie , and we've only just managed to sleep now

Me : send me your location and room number

Princess : okay

Me : and are you okay ?

Princess : bedtimes not getting some sleep
I'm okay

Me : ke ya go rata gee (I love you)

She laughs and that's what I was hoping for

Princess : your drama this morning Batlokoa
it's too much

This whole thing of being from two many
kingdoms it's not healthy at all

Princess : le nna ka go rata aker (I love you
too right)

We speak both isiZulu as Setswana

Me : send that location and get some sleep

Princess : okay bye

We hang up

Enhle : don't tell me you're leaving

Me : my sister needs me

Enhle : but isn't she in Durban ?

Me : and that's an hour away from here

Enhle : but baby , okay I'm coming with
right ? You're not leaving me here alone

Me : come with , uyaphi ? (Where are you
going)

She does not believe

Me : I'm dropping you off at your place

I walk to the bathroom because I've already
spoke a lot this morning alone

I don't need to speak again for a few hours

.

.

Dikeledi

I surely slept , and it's almost 10:00 I'm only waking up

Princess is still asleep , I get off the bed nicely making sure not to wake her

The sun is out and it's a beautiful day , I go take a long cold shower

This is me preventing to be too much sweaty during the day

When I'm done I dry and lotion , I don't wear anything just tie a towel around myself

We're booked in a private suite , that even has a small lounge area

I binge on the couch watching cartoons , I'll die still watching those

It's a while before Princess walks in , she's still in nightwear

Me : hope I didn't wake you up

Princess : no , it's the heat

She snuggles next to me

Me : I'm sorry

I feel so bad , I'm really not aware that I have nightmares

But last night I was shows flames , I was so away from Thato

But I had to live the nightmare in my dreams

And that has instilled some fear in me , what's going to happen when I go back home ?

Rose is just Rose and she doesn't care about anything , that's why she let me go

I don't even want to imagine how furious Thato is where he is

Princess : don't be silly , I kind of escaped from my nightmare

Me : what ?

Princess : don't think I'm crazy right

Me : anyone can be crazy but just not you, why would I think that ?

Princess : because most nights , I have dreams I think . And I wake up with strange things , I'd be wet sometimes crying . It's just a lot , and the sad thing is that I always wake up with an empty mind . Like I remember nothing at all

Me : and what does your seer say ?

Princess : I haven't told anyone , I'm scared of what they'll say . What if something is wrong with me , or I'm being used to bad things ?

Me : you're a princess , you can't be used for witchcraft at night . By blood you're protected bunny

Princess : so I shouldn't worry ?

Me : about being used yes , you know my mother used to be some kind of a believer . And she always used to say that dreams are very important , and that they're a communication . From spirits to us

Princess : wow

Me : that's what she used to say , I'm not saying I believe that

She laughs

Princess : but what can I do to make sure I don't forget my dreams ? It's really upsetting honestly

And you can pick up from her voice

Me : now I don't know how true is this , but people use all different kinds of things to help them remember dreams . Some use snuff under their pillows , other use coins . Some even use salt . My mother used to pray with a white candle and a glass of water every night

Princess : I can do that as well ?

Me : do what ?

Princess : use the white candle and glass of water ? That sounds more pure in a way

Now I laugh

Me : I'm sure you can

Princess : then we're not forgetting a candle today when we go shopping , and the water can be any kind right ?

Me : as long as it's clean I think , because after prayer you have to drink the water

Princess : that's intriguing , why haven't you told me this all this time ?

Me : how was I supposed to know you're struggling to sleep bunny ?

We laugh

Princess : I feel so light , I hope this can really be a solution .

Me : yeah but I think you should also talk to your mother

Princess : yeah I'll do it

Me : okay

Princess : and about your nightmares

Me : I've never had those , last night was the first time and I don't know why

I don't want to be judged , I don't want her to look at me differently

I don't see myself telling anyone what Thato is doing . What if they turn against me , because I'm staying with the man that's abusing me ?

No one will get that I have nowhere to go , if I leave I'll live in the streets

And what about school ? Only 3 weeks left before I write my final exams

I don't want to lose that chance , to finish matrix . Princess and I we applied to so many universities

I applied for financial aid , if I get accepted and I receive the money

That's my finally way out of this nightmare , so I can't ruin my chances of making it out

Princess : I was just going to say , don't stress about it . And if ever you want to talk, I'm here for you okay .

I nod

Princess : when you're ready no pressure

She gets up

Princess : let me go shower we have an amazing day ahead of us

Me : happy birthday

She giggles and gives me a peck , I so hate those

But she's Princess and very much affectionate

.

.

Princess

I hope the candle and water will help me for real , and Ledi is right I should tell my mother about this

I think she will understand in a way , and maybe they can be able to help me

I'm just relived that last night I wasn't bothered , and I think that's because I was up half the whole night

I'm done taking a shower , I put on black bum ripped bum shorts white t-shirt with white slippers

I walk back to the lounge and she's still watching cartoons

Me : will you ever get dressed ?

Ledi : in a minute

She's lying , a knock comes at the door . I get it and it's my brother

Tyler : looking beautiful

Me : thank you

I make way for him he walks in , and the
looks Ledi gives me

Now I remember I didn't tell her that he's
coming here

Tyler : aren't you too old for that ?

He says taking the remote and changing the
channel

We have a mute one right now , I can't help
but wonder what's the deal with these two

And Tyler only came here because of what I said , that she had nightmares

I just look at them exchanging looks saying nothing to each other

And my friend is so gone , like one look at Tyler she already sees herself as Mrs Zungu

Me : Ledi don't you want to go get dressed?

Ledi : yeah

But she's still sitting down

Me : yeah what ?

Ledi : huh ?

She looks at me and I just laugh , she's into Ty but Prince wants her

My poor brother , I so need to tell him to step back

Tyler : go get dressed , you're making me uncomfortable

He's lying he's so enjoying the view , the towel is short

Those yellow thighs are exposed , and Ledi is a thick

And hour glass body shape that's her , small on top but packing down

She gets up and drags me with her , Tyler sits where she was seated

Ledi : why didn't you tell me he's coming ?

This is sweet

Me : it slipped my mind

Ledi : nice really nice

Me : are you two dating ?

Ledi : what no

She puts on her blue knee ripped skinny jeans a white short sleeve vest with white flip flops

With such a fine banging body , you'll never find her exposing it

She doesn't even wear skirts , not even at school

Me : you were wearing his clothes yesterday and when I found you , you were with him . How do you know each other , because my brother lives in Cape town

Ledi : he kind of hit me the day before , and took me to the hospital . That's how I ended at the palace with him . I didn't even know he's your brother , right this moment .

Me : he hit you ?

Ledi : with his car , and I'm fine leave it . He just become creepy about the whole thing

She walks out to the lounge , I follow and my brother is not taking his eyes off of her

This is a done deal , these two will end together even if they're not right now.
Prince better stay away , he's just going to get hurt

Sambulo

Sambulo



With Tyler gone , the work load has just increased for me . It's a lot

And having to keep the innocent straight appearance , I don't even have time for myself

Jase walks in , we're at the office together

Jase : you've been served

He hands me envelope

Me : you went and opened it ?

Jase : I hate the smell of law enforcement ,
you should know that by now

Me : so what's the deal ?

Jase : maintenance

The hell

Me : why haven't I killed that girl ?

Jase : your own baby mama

I have nothing against women , nothing at
all. But their tactics , are so underhanded

A fuck buddy took my sperms and got herself pregnant

She told me she's pregnant , and knowing I was always safe with her

I refused , she went ahead and did DNA tests . And indeed it was my child , I told her to abort I don't want any babies

She refused , and I told her plain that if she keeps the baby she must know it's hers

I want nothing to do with that child or her , but did she listen ? No . She went ahead and kept the baby , but now she can't keep away from me

Women are just so fucking selfish , if tables were turned

And she wanted to abort , it wouldn't have mattered how much I asked or begged her to keep the baby

It was going to be , it's her body her choices her rights

Isn't that the same as what I asked her ?
She keeps the baby it's her responsibility

Even if I marry some day and have kids , that one will never be mine . That was my choice , and I even gave her money . She took it but did not abort

So that baby of her's is not mine , because if she didn't want it she would have aborted

Even if I wanted her to keep the baby , and no one was going to judge her

She can take me to court all she wants , but I'll never be a father to her child

But if she keeps pestering me , I'll end up burying her and doing myself a whole favour

.

.

.

INSERT 06

Dikeledi

I'm so not myself right now , this gorgeous man being here is not doing me any justice

And every second I take a look at him , and I have those thoughts I just hate myself more

I don't even know how to explain this , I'm not supposed to look at any man this way

Princess : Ohhh I need to go in there

I'm tired , I get it's her birthday and it's fine
that she's all crazy

Going shop after shop , but enough is
enough

Princess : please come

Me : no

Princess : but....

Tyler : just go alone , you'll find us at the
restaurant I'm hungry now . Remind me to
never accompany women shopping again

Why is he bothered ? 99.9 percent of the time he's been on his phone

I'm sure talking to his girlfriend Enhle Argh

Princess : you weren't invited

She leaves us going into the shop she wanted to go to

Tyler : let's go in here

Not him too , why can't we just sit down ? I act like I didn't hear what he said . The second his hand touches my arm , I'm away from him . And again he's caught on

Me : sorry

Tyler : why are you apologizing ?

Isn't it a norm , Thato violates me and I
always beg him to stop

I beg him not to , and he doesn't stop . He
does what he wants

And I'll cry , I'll apologize for what I don't
know

So it's from there , saying this much sorry
even for nothing

I apologize to my rapist for something I
don't even know

Tyler : come

He holds his hand this time around , it's
quite a while before I take it

And I need some deliverance from this man,
the things his touch is making me feel

Tyler : see it's okay

It's really okay , because I'm feeling better
than fine

We walk into Telkom holding hands like that , and I'm like I hope he never lets go

We roam around the store , his one hand is busy on his phone

I don't like that Enhle , why is she keeping him this much occupied ?

Tyler : seen anything you like yet ?

Me ?

Me : anything like ?

Tyler : a phone maybe or something

Me : I wasn't even looking

Tyler : so this was a waste of my time ?

Me : why would I be a waste of your time ?

Lord help me , he chuckles and side smiles
for a few seconds

My words ring in my head , and how can I
be so stupid ?

Me : I didn't....

Tyler : you can never be a waste of my time

Me : I didn't mean to say that

Tyler : what I was saying was that , walking around the store was a waste of my time because you weren't looking

So he's ignoring me okay it's fine

Tyler : let me pick one for you

Why does he let go of my hand ? Did he have to ?

Me : I don't need a phone

Tyler : you do

Me : no , I have no use for it

Tyler : you have me now , so there'll be plenty use for it

Me : I have you ?

He looks at me , I even get embarrassed and look down

Tyler : yeah you have me , don't forget it sweetheart

God take me now , even if I never return I won't mind . Can he call me sweetheart again ?

Because the way he said , went straight
from my ears to my heart

Tyler : this one is perfect for you

Oh he's picked the phone

Tyler : come on take my hand

I take that deep breath and take his hand
into mine , and the same feeling is still
there

In my head I'm like he's Enhle's boyfriend ,
this is going to end in tears

I so hate that Enhle

He pays as we leave , going to one of the nearest restaurant . And we just had to sit on opposite sides , the universe is rotating too fast

Tyler : I'll set this up for you , and leave my number . Now you get to use it

Me : for what ?

He lifts his eyes and stares at me

Tyler : call me , I won't mind to see your face everyday so FaceTime

Me : you know I'm a student right ?

Tyler : I'll be giving you a phone allowance ,
so worry your pretty self not sweetheart

And the universe is back on this side , I fear
the disaster my face is right now

He goes back to doing what he was doing
on the phone

Princess : I'm back

Me : there was no need to announce

She laughs , sitting down and she has shopping bags

Princess : are we not eating ?

Tyler : why aren't we ?

Princess : you're busy there and she's...well being herself

I don't even know what's the meaning of that

She calls a waiter over we both order

Princess : are you not eating ?

She asks her brother

Tyler : please order for me

This man , and he's for real

Me : I don't know what you eat and don't

Tyler : don't worry , order it I will eat

Someone is so amused besides me , I cancel
my first initial order and just order a platter

.

.

.

Prince

My brother is the person to go to , when you want things to be done

He went all out and it's even better than what I had in mind

Zamo : your brother knows you have this much meat here ?

I laugh

Me : is that what we call them now ?

Zamo : and I'm getting piece

Me : have fine , but be safe

He walks away , I'm just by the balcony with my own thoughts

As much as this is a celebration of some sort, I'm not really feeling this

Something is really wrong with me , and I don't just mean physically

Even emotionally I don't feel okay at all

This whole thing is just a chilled vibe to me ,
nothing extraordinary about it

And I blame my mood right now

I should be getting drink , fucking whores
before my own girlfriend arrives

But here I am , it's too crowded inside . And
I keep getting hot , like feeling some crazy
wave of heat

That's also one of the reasons why I'm here

-
-
-

Princess

But overall we had an amazing day , and it was even more amazing to see Tyler and Ledi interact with each other

And I think my friend is in love , just that she doesn't know how to go about it

He dropped us at the hotel , and said he'll go check on Prince then go home

Me : are you ready ?

Ledi : yeah

We have the candle and a glass of water ,
somehow I'm excited about this

We're in our gowns , and our heads are
covered

Me : do we pray first ?

Ledi : I think so , I mean we're praying after
all

We kneel down , I light the candle . And
something tells me to sprinkle a bit of water
around us

Ledi : now what ?

Me : I don't know

She laughs

Me : should you even be laughing , when we're about to pray ?

Ledi : I... forget let's pray

We're supposed to be praying , but I'm saying doesn't make sense

I'm uttering words that I don't even understand

Ledi : stop

I hear her loud and clear , I open my eyes .
But it's hard to close my mouth , the words
keep coming out of my mouth

Ledi : Princess what's wrong ?

I can't say anything else , except to keep
uttering these words

A whole heavy presence overwhelms me ,
she puts her hand over my mouth

And blows the candle off , I slowly remove
her hand from my mouth

Ledi : tell me you're okay

I nod

Me : do you feel that ?

Ledi : we're not alone

I shake my head , and we both look around .
But there's no one in here

Physically yes , but we can feel the
presence. And I'm glad I'm not feeling it
alone

Ledi : that was spooky , we're never doing this again

There goes nothing , at just first attempt

Suddenly I hear a wave of water in my ears , I try scratching them but it's no use

Ledi : Princess

She's calling out to me , but this doesn't stop . And my body starts shaking like very bad . I'm down on her floor sweating , I'm loosing breath . My eyes closed all I see is waves of water . And something is pulling me , I feel like my soul is leaving my body

As crazy as it feels , I'm also seeing this . My soul floating right above my body on this floor

.

.

.

Dikeledi

If the royal family doesn't punish me for that , then I don't know what . I feel like I'm in the midst of shadows , a whole feeling I felt when Tyler almost hit me as he said

This is just creepy and scary as hell , I grab my phone and call him

Crossing fingers and hoping he answers , Princess is down on the floor not hearing a thing I'm saying

Tyler : sweetheart

Me : ple....please you have to come now....she's....please calm

Tyler : okay I'm coming , stay calm don't drop the call

The phone allowance is coming in handy right now , because he loaded enough airtime for me not to drop the call

I'm on the floor right next to a no breathing Princess

I'm crying , having shortness of breath . It's a battle and I feel like I'll lose

The whole time , he's busy talking to me or rather trying to calm me down

And it's like it's working somehow , I can't afford to have an anxiety attack right now

I'm so thankful when the door opens and he walks in , I don't even know how he opened

Me : please....help ...her

Tyler : shhhh sweetheart I need you to calm down

He crouches down next to me

Tyler : come on you can touch me it's okay

I think this is his way of saying , I don't have to fear his touch again like he did with the hand thing

I hold his arms , he just engulfs me

Tyler : shhhhh it's okay , it's okay

After a while I gather myself , and get my normal breathing first

He helps me up

Me : you have to help her

Tyler : what happened here ?

Me : we....we were praying and she....she's not breathing

I cry all over again , I'm scared for my life
and worse scared for her

Tyler : okay let's go

He picks her up , and takes my hand . We
walk out heading to his car

The drive back to the village , my mind is
not even here

We arrive at the palace , he runs out with
her

We're welcomed by the king and queen

Queen Royalty : Ty what happened ?

Tyler : apparently they were praying and she , I don't know

Me : we had a white candle and a glass of water , we were supposed to pray . But she started speaking a language I don't know , next thing I knew her body was shaking . She was down on the floor . It's my fault

I cry and the queen embraces me

Queen Royalty : you can't say it's your fault baby it's okay , she's going to be okay

I hope so

King Africa : where is Prince ?

Tyler : in Musgrave

Queen Royalty : Africa

King Africa : I'm on it , I'll bring him back
safe

He leaves

Queen Royalty : Baby it's late now , you
can't go home . Let me go show you a room

you'll use for the night . Tyler please take her into the hut

The queen and I go into the quarter I'll be using

Queen Royalty : don't worry about Princess, I know you're scared but she's going to be okay

I just nod , hoping what she's saying is really true

She leaves , and I get into bed . But sleep doesn't come I lay awake

.

Tyler

My father arrives and he's with Prince
who's also out of it

The hut has some kind of a pool inside , and
no one is allowed in here besides the royal
family . And the royal seer , right now the
two are dipped inside the water

I'm not worried that they won't be okay ,
I'm more worried about Ledi . The way she
was crying , she was really scared

Mom : where did you find him ?

Dad : at the hotel , he locked himself in the room . I guess he felt it when he was about to change

Mom : oh my poor babies

Me : change ?

Dad : he took after me

Isn't he just so perfect for the throne ?

Mom : but this happened too quick

Dad : I was younger than them , I guess we were just too late to tell them first . She needs to go to Batlokoa as soon as possible, I know she has school . For now we can appease and call the marine queen and ask her to give her a bit of time . As for Prince he just needs to learn his powers , there's nothing much we can do for him . The veld needs to be his friend so he can be able to open up

Me : so he has wings like you ?

Dad : yes , he was on the floor when I got there . They were half out , and because he's not used to it . He was hurting

Me : you people are creepy

Mom : aren't you one of us people ?

I laugh getting up

Me : I love you mommy , and please go rest

She's pregnant she can't be this stressed
and up at this time

I walk out heading to my chamber , but I
turn right at the door . And go to the
quarter she's using , I knock and it doesn't
take long she answers . She wasn't asleep

Ledi : who's it ?

Me : it's me

She doesn't open for a while

Me : you know I'm freezing out here

Ledi : what do you want ?

I never lose heart with her , she needs me
to be gentle

Me : please open

After a while she opens the door

Me : let me in please

She moves out of the way I get in and lock the door

She stands still on her feet and doesn't move to anywhere

Me : she's going to be fine , she's to be queen of the kingdom where our father hails from . So don't worry yourself

Ledi : she's really going to be okay ?

Me : yes

Ledi : okay , thank you for telling me

Me : now can we sleep ?

Ledi : we ?

I walk to the bed and take my sneakers off
and the hoodie

Me : yes we

Ledi : shouldn't you go sleep I'm your
chamber ?

Me : I want to sleep here tonight , don't worry I won't hurt you . I know you don't trust me , just take my word for it

She debates with herself for a while before coming to bed

Me : can I hold you ?

She shakes her head no

Me : please

She has her back turned on me , she even has her gown on still

Me : please look at me sweetheart

She slowly turns and faces me , her eyes closed

Me : open your eyes

And that gets me a reaction from her , me saying that has just triggered something

Me : hey , it's me . Focus on my voice , open your eyes

Slowly she opens her eyes

Me : can I hold you ?

She nods slowly , very unsure of her decision

Me : come on you hold me first

I let her take her own time , she lays her hand on my chest

And that gives her the courage to snuggle closer I hold her

Me : get some sleep now

I kiss the top of her head

.

.

INSERT 07

Dikeledi

This I never predicted or even though it'll
happen

Me sharing a bed with another man , have him cuddle me the whole night

And I didn't even have nightmares , I didn't even get the urge to push him away

Already by 06:30 we were both awake . And he's not the type that talks immediately after waking up

He kept quite for almost an hour before he said good morning

I returned it and he just asked if I slept well , after my response he was quite again

Me : thank you

We're still in bed cuddling , and I wish I didn't have to go back home

The fear of what is awaiting me there , terrifies me

Tyler : for what ?

Being here , holding me the whole night .
Always reassuring me that he won't hurt me

That I'm safe with him

Me : what you did last night

Of course I can't utter the words of what I'm really thanking him for

This attraction I feel towards him , it scares me . Why am I even feeling this way ?

Tyler : it's okay , when you're with me this is your safe space

He feels like a safe space , but is it safe enough to tell him just how broken I am ?

Will he not run away and continue with his perfect life , without a burdened me ?

Me : I should

Tyler : don't ruin this moment sweetheart

This is a man with a girlfriend , I shouldn't even be having a moment with him

Me : I don't want to have high hopes , I'll crush and burn so bad . And I'm not strong Ty , already in broken beyond repair . I don't need these moments with you , because they won't last at all .

He shifts a bit , positioning me perfectly on top of him . We look at each other for a minute

Tyler : what makes you think it won't last ?

Me : I said I'm broken , in actual fact I'm just damaged

Tyler : you're telling me , and I haven't told you . What makes you think I'm any better than you ?

Me : because you are

Tyler : you have no idea what you're talking about

Me : you have no idea

He smiles for a second , if I wasn't paying attention I was so going to miss it

I've realised , he does it so fast it's like he doesn't want to be caught on smiling

Me : and there's also Enhle

I say it so annoyed , I don't like that girl .
Only because she's his girlfriend

Tyler : I've messed around yes fooled with bitches , and well surely played around . But I'm done now , you wanna know why ?

Me : why ?

Tyler : because I've met you , and you're the one I'm marrying

I want him , I want him so bad . That it even hurts me to admits this

I shouldn't even be feeling this way , but here I am

Me : you don't mean that

I try to get off him , he holds me down

Tyler : we're talking

Me : you don't need a woman like me ,
there's plenty you can marry

I don't want him marrying anyone , even
though I know he deserves the best and I'm
not it

Tyler : I'm marrying you

I smile , but it's a painful one . It ends up
being accompanied by a tear that falls on
his neck

He wipes it off my cheek , and kisses the
you of my head

Tyler : overcome this , and the second
you're done . I'm putting a ring on it
because I like it

I laugh

Me : life is not fair , why did it have to be
me ? Now I'll loose on this chance to love
and be loved , all because of something I
didn't even ask for

It's only when he brushes my back , I realise
how far I've gone

Me : don't mind me

Tyler : I'm minding you now , and that's
how it'll always be

He's so perfect , and I'm just being selfish
not wanting him not to be with me

Because I know I can never be what he
needs , I can never be anything any man
needs

.

.

.

Princess

It feels like forever and I've been in this portal , when I finally land in water

And this is the most beautiful place I've ever seen , I don't get how my feet are on the floor right in the water but they are

I'm breathing fine , I keep looking at myself.
And I'm wearing royal blue dress that fits my body perfectly

Voice : Kgosikgadi (my queen)

It's like I'm hearing my aunt Asante talking ,
I look around and I see nothing

Voice : setshabe ka gore o gae (don't fear because you're home)

The voice keeps getting clearer and louder

Me : o Mang ? (Who are you)

Whoever it is laughs slightly

Voice : lebella (look)

I lift my eyes up and the portal is opened again , only now the blue is deeper

And she lands right next to me , a whole older version of my aunt

Me : kgosikgadi Mphoentle (my queen)

There's no way I can never not know my grandmother . I've seen her pictures back at home in Botswana , and she still looks the same even now

Grandma : get rid of this fear my dear queen , you have come of age now . You're about to experience a lot of things that are not normal to this world , you're no mundane human . You hail from three of the most dominant water kingdoms , Batlokoa , Manzini and oNgwenya . Embrace who you are my dear queen , and you shall do great wonders . You'll heal the land , mend broken hearts . Give birth to dry wombs , you'll be a healer to broken

women . Be who you are , take heart and get rid of this fear . From here on , know that the fallen queens of Batlokoa are behind you every step of the way . At every portal of water , you can be able to call on us . And we will answer , just like we answered now

Me : I called you ?

Grandma : yes , remember any portal of water connects us with you

I remember praying with Ledi , and we had that glass of water . But the prayer didn't go according to plan , because things started going haywire

Me : I don't understand all of this

She smiles taking my hand

Grandma : you have your answers right in front of you

I look but I see nothing just water , and water creatures

She laughs , realising my confusion

Grandma : I mean your mother

Me : oh

Grandma : she will help you through all this, just bring her closer . Don't keep things from her

Me : but I don't remember any of the things that happen in my sleep

Grandma : remember the fear , your mind always suppresses what your subconscious mind goes through . Because of the fear of what the reality of that might be

Now it's starting to make sense in a way , as soon as I'm home

I need a mother and daughter day out , so we can talk about all this

Hopefully she will understand and be able to help me

I don't want to be scared of who I am , I want to be able to embrace myself

And all thanks to my friend , she gave me a way with that glass of water

I'll never be able to thank her enough

Grandma : she's a sister and not a friend , cherish her

I look at her , and she's smiling

Me : you read my mind ?

Grandma : no , but your face says it all . And I know you were with her when we took you

Me : is she okay ?

Grandma : she's okay , perfectly where she is

Now that's good news

.

.

.

Dikeledi

After breakfast Tyler excused himself ,
saying he had business to take care of

Now being left at the palace all day , going
crazy with thoughts

I wonder how Princess is ? I can't stop
blaming myself about what happened

I shouldn't have told her anything about
those stupid things

Walking out I bump into the queen

Me : my queen

She says nothing for a while , I end up lifting my head looking at her

And she's just looking at me strangely

Me : my queen are you okay ?

She puts her hand on her tummy , and she looks like she's in pain

Her eyes are very scary right now , the way she's looking at me

One guard approaches us , and he doesn't look very pleased somehow

Him : my queen are you well ?

He looks at him and me , and he's not missing the look on her face

Him : leave now

He says to me very aggressive , the queen seems to be in an unbreakable pain

She wants to utter something but she's failing to

Him : leave now , young girl you seem to be trouble everywhere you are . Don't bring your witchcraft ways here at the palace

He takes the queen who's very reluctant ,
but he takes her anyways

His words ring in my head , he said I being
trouble everywhere I am

And what's the witchcraft he's talking
about?

Now I'm hurt , the way the queen was in
pain . In her situation I hope she's well and
the baby

Am I really trouble ? Look what happened
to the princess and it's all because of me

My tears betray me and that leads me back to the place I thought I'll never go back

I didn't even feel the distance from the palace to the outskirts

I knock at the door , and he's the one who opens . His eyes are red of anger the second he lays his eyes on me

Me : abuti.....(brother)

He just drags me inside the house , I make contact with the cupboard . With my stomach , I scream in pain . Slaps and punches follows . I land on the floor

He just kicks me , he doesn't stop

Me : I'm....sorry

My cries and pleads all just fuel him worse

I left the palace because of what that guard
said , and if anyone's believes that I bring
trouble

They were going to kick me out anyways ,
and tomorrow we have school

Either way I was just forced to come back
here , only to meet my death that would be
even much better

Thato : I'll teach you a lesson today

I'm bleeding in my mouth , my nose .

There's just nowhere that he's not beating
me up

If he does not kill me today , then I don't
know what

.

.

.

Tyler

My mother sure gave us a scare , but she's
okay now . The doctor checked on her

And the seer also cleared that she's okay ,
when it comes to my mother

My father doesn't take any chances

Now that she's okay , I can rest . But I'm
worried I haven't seen Ledi since I got back

I go to the quarter she's using and it's
locked , there's no key inside

I go to my chamber , and she's nowhere to
be found as well

A whole panic hits me , I go back to the main house

Me : where is she ?

Dad : who ?

Me : Princess's friend

Mom : a terrible mistake has happened

She says concerned

Me : what ?

Mom : I was coming in the gate , and it seemed like she was going out . A troubled shadow was behind her , I tried communicating with it . Silently so I didn't startle her , but she got so worried about me . While trying to make sure I'm okay a guard came by , and he wasn't so nice at all to her . I was already in pain by that time , I couldn't even utter anything to correct him. My guess is she left after that

An angry me is not needed right now , but it's too late

Me : what did the guard say ?

Mom : something about her bringing trouble where she is , and something about witchcraft

Me : he called her a witch ?

Mom : not in those words but it sounded like it and I need to talk to him , I don't appreciate the way he treated her

Now she's getting angry , I can't have her angry . I'll deal with this

Dad : which guard was this ?

Mom : the one from the post with Thato ,
what's his name again

Dad : Musa ?

Mom : yes him

Me : I have to go

If she left , there's only one place she can be
at. I'll deal with this Musa , right now she
takes first priority

I wasn't going to allow her to go back there,
I believe she's getting the abuse at home

Which is why I wanted to talk to Princess about this , so I could know who she stays with at home

I guess now I'll find on my own . And I hope for everyone's sake I find her okay

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 08

Tyler

I get off my car , run inside and I don't even knock

I'm welcomed by my own heart , bleeding naked on the floor . Looking battered , with bruises everywhere on her body

I'm quick to pick her up and she's still alive , a woman comes in with throw

Her : he ran away

I just look at her , she's telling me useless information right now . He ran away , where was she when he was beating her up like this ?

But one thing is certain she's not violated ,
she's badly beaten that's all

And that's no relief to me at all , whoever
he is shouldn't have put his hands on her to
begin with

I pick her from the floor naked as she is .I
walk to my car and cover her with my own
jacket , I drive back to the palace

Making sure to bring the car closer to my
chamber , so no one gets to see her like this

I pick her up and walk inside my chamber , I
lay her down on the bed

Quickly run a bath for her , I have herbs that
I use when it feels like I've been to war

I put her inside , and she cries in pain . The
herbs hurt , but they're going to draw the
pain from her bruises and wounds

She keeps holding on to me , I hate seeing
her like this

But this is the only way to get her better ,
now I can't take her to the hospital

They'll want to open a case , and when he
goes missing there'll be talks

I don't want anyone looking at her anyhow ,
because of anything I'm about to do

After a while I take her out , dry and lotion
her . I put only my t-shirt on her and put her
into bed

I hold her into my hands , and my mind is
far away from here

Me : I'm sorry I wasn't here , I shouldn't
have left you alone

She holds tight to me , she's hurting herself.
But I guess right now she doesn't care

She just wants to know she's safe and I'm the closest thing to that

Me : who did this to you?

I have all the time in the world , to wait until she answers me

Ledi : t...Thato my.... Brother

When you think abuse comes home , you consider close family friends

Or uncle's even stepfather's , you don't think of brother's

Because those are meant to be protectors ,
not to be the ones inflicting pain

Me : no one will ever hurt you again

I don't want to leave her but there's no way
I'll be in bed and while people who hurt her
are roaming around

When she's asleep I make sure to get off
the bed , not waking her up

I'll be back before she can even notice that
I'm gone . I walk out the door , and this
Musa is right next to my chamber

Me : Musa

Musa : my prince

Me : you just had to being yourself huh ?

He looks at me confused

Me : come let's take a walk

We walk through the East side heading to the palace garden that leads out to the veld

Musa : where could we be going this late ?

Me : worry yourself no

On the further side there's a huge big
they're there , and there's a shadow

Something pulls me towards it , and this
one is still following me

Musa : Thato is this you ?

When the gods deliver they deliver , and
they'll do so on a silver platter

He has a ripe hanging on the tree , but he's
a coward he can't even kill himself . He has
to cry and be sorry about this

Me : take this rope down

Musa takes it

Me : now you'll sit down here , while I tie you onto this tree . I'll be back to visit you in the morning , and we can talk right

Musa : my...

Me : do as I said , or I just finish with you right here right now

He settles next to his useless friend , I use that rope to tie them both to the tree

Making sure they have nothing near they
can use to cut it

I walk back to the palace

-
-
-

Sambulo

There's a court case now because I ignored
the summons

But I'm not bothered , I'm not scared
because of that

I'll just do what I do best and eliminate the
threat

Being a criminal the one thing I don't want
is to have cops anywhere near me

I'd hate to kill this woman and her child ,
but she's bothering me

My phone rings and it's Tyler , it's middle of
the night just before dawn

Me : Manzini

Tyler : come here as in yesterday

He drops the call , and shit is about to go down

That's if it hasn't happened already , because he doesn't need anyone to do so

He's only calling me to tame him when he runs loose

And I can't go there on my own , even he gets too much for me

I call Jase , two is always better than one

Jase : you better have a good reason why you're calling me at this time

Me : we have to go to Manzini

Jase : why again ?

Me : Ty called , I fear he's about to paint that land with blood

Jase : shit no , what happened now ?

Me : don't ask me questions , we need to leave

Jase : I'll be there in a few

I drop the call , we don't stay far from each other . Right now we'll find a plane right at the airport

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Everything hurts , like there's no part in my body that's not in pain

Thato sure did me , as if it wasn't enough .
He has to strip me naked and beat me like
that

What I did to wrong him , must be huge .
Because the hate that he holds for me is no
little thing

Tyler : I'm sorry this is hurting you

He's bathing me again , I don't even have
the time to have reactions whatsoever

He already bathed me last night , he's
already seen me naked touched my bare
skin

He dries and lotions me , I wear one of his t-shirt again he helps me put it on

Even just the touch of clothing on me hurts, he puts back on the bed

Tyler : you didn't eat yesterday , I'm sorry about that . Here is breakfast

Me : don't....

The struggle it is to even speak

Tyler : sweetheart you have to let me take care of you

Right now I don't even know what's what , I don't want to get used to this

Only to loose it and him in the process ,
Thato will always haunt me

To think I should be at school today , but
here I am all thanks to him again

Tyler : come on you have to eat

I try to take the spoon from him , he doesn't
let me

Me : I can...feed...myself

Tyler : yeah surely you can , but I'm doing it

The patience he has feeding someone who takes forever to chew and swallow

But he's taking his time and not even rushing me until I'm done , he gives me painkillers

And I don't trust them , I have a feeling they're so going to knock me out

Tyler : I'm sorry I wasn't there , I'll never fail to protect you like that ever again

Me : I... shouldn't be...here

Tyler : don't start

Me : they....think I'm....a witch

Tyler : sweetheart sleep okay

I'm already getting drowsy I think it's those pills of his

Me : in case I...never get to...tell you this....I love you

Already I'm sinking down on the pillow , eyes closed I hear his voice but I can't make out what he's saying

Last night I remember is a kiss to the forehead

.

.

.

Sambulo

We arrive at the house he sent directions for , of course it's late in the afternoon

We had to be at the airport for few hours awaiting a flight that wasn't full

Jase : this place reeks of blood

Me : not you and your feels again

I open the door , and he's sitting down .
There's two other guys naked

He has a bath full of water , and there's all
kinds of electronic tortures in here

But one thing about Tyler is that he doesn't
torture , he goes straight for the kill

In the most gruesome way ever

Jase : can I ?

He takes the sjambok , and heads straight for one of the guys

He beats the shit out of him , and Tyler is here looking like he's not even here

They guy is crying out in pain , but Jase is having fun

Me : what.....

He gets up and drags the badly beaten guy by Jase , and he throws him inside the bath

The electronic torture is already inside the bath , as he puts it on

The agony that the guy is crying out of , he's naked what is this shit doing to his dick

He'll never and able to use that shit like ever again

Just know it's damn horror , when you can't even take watching yet you're part of of the Mafia's

This is too much , his body gives up . Tyler drags him out of the water again

His skin is peeling off , he's bleeding so badly . And you think that I was worse

He cuts the guys balls , and shoves them
right into his mouth

He's busy gawking , the other guy throws up
where he is . I don't blame him

I'll need therapy after this , this is disturbing

How do you cut a man's balls as feed them
to him

It's disgusting to watching , how this guy
can't even throw those balls out

Me : fuck

I feel like going out and throwing

He's back in the bathtub , and just electrocuted to death . But I think he died right after swallowing his own balls

Jase : that was gruesome

Me : and you just joined in

He shrugs his shoulders

Tyler : I have a problem with your kind , a mere fucking security guard at the palace . And you think that makes you something better than others , where do you get off

telling my woman she's trouble and the nerve to accuse her of witchcraft

What now ! Tyler just claimed a woman as his , is Jesus finally coming back or what

Tyler : let that be a lesson

He takes a knife , and he cuts the man everywhere he can

Jase : he's decorating him

Me : he's crazy

When Tyler gets into this killing mode of his he just doesn't know when to stop

That's why we're here , not because he wants us to help kill . He's very much capable of doing so himself

The man is weak like very weak , he doesn't survive the knife cuts

I don't know what these two man did , but damn they died gruesome

And I won't mind to meet this woman that has Tyler spilling blood just for her

.

Tyler

She's asleep , I thought I'll find her awake .
So I'm a bit disappointed but it's the pills

I just wanted to tell her that I love her too ,
and that she still has many chances to tell
me that

Because I doubt she heard me when I
responded back

In this case she just came out straight ,
expressed her feelings

And that got her a man , not that I wasn't
hers already but she made it official

I walk out to get her food , but I'm met by
my mother going out of the throne room

Me : mommy you're not well

Mom : it's these damn royal council men ,
Tyler you have to find Dikeledi for me . I
need to know why that shadow is following
her

I wasn't crazy when I said there's a shadow there , meaning I really saw it

Me : okay , what is the royal council saying?

Mom : they're accusing her of witchcraft , and they want her burned . You have to find her for me , before any of them finds her

These people just don't know when enough is enough

Me : okay go rest now

I watch her as she walks inside the house , I walk inside the throne room

Me : apologies my king , I didn't realise you were busy

I don't even wait for him to respond , I saw everyone in there and I'm fine

Sambulo : now I feel fresh

We meet at the corner , we came back here after leaving the house

Me : good , now I want you to make sure each and everyone in that throne room of the royal council doesn't make it home tonight . And I mean all 7 of them

Sambulo : what did these people do to you

Me : touched the apple of my eye

Jase : make it 9 , in a day that's bad . We'll let you know when we have them all

I leave them there , walking back to my chamber . I'll spend time with her before I leave again

.

.

.

INSERT 09

Tyler

I know my mother means well , and only hopes to help Ledi

I could have just told her the truth that she's here , but what she said about the council

Just got me back on protective mode , and first instinct was to protect her . I'll kill whoever tries to harm her , I don't give a rats ass if they were going to or just

planning to . They will die , just for the mere thought of wanting her to be killed

Having this woman in my arms , and have people be out there ready to destroy her and for what ?

There's nothing I won't do to protect her , at Al costs . I'll do everything and anything I can

Even if it means spilling blood all over this kingdom I'll do that and have no regrets whatsoever

My phone rings , and it's Sambulo I answer

Me : yeah

Sambulo : we go them all , we're at the far
end forest

Me : I'll be there soon

I drop the call , these pills really knocked
her out

But I know she'll be a whole better
tomorrow

-
-
-

Sambulo

We have those 5 men and 2 women tied to the tries , stripped naked on top

They're crying and begging us to let them go , but it's all just so useless

Tyler sends you on a task you do it , and keep your own fucking feels out of it

Jase : it's always all fun when Ty is around

I don't understand people who rejoice over death , as much as we kill

At the end of the day we're still people , okay let me just say that for myself

He arrives , and looks like he's been walking

Me : won't we get eaten by wild animals here ?

Jase : he's the animal that will devour you

We laugh

Tyler : where is that tool box ?

Jase hands it to him , he fiddles inside of it until he finds what he's looking for

Call me a coward or what , but it's enough for one day

Seeing this much blood , it has got to be disturbing

He's so invested as he's busy cutting their toes and fingers , not forgetting ears

I swear something is definitely wrong with Tyler I don't care what anyone says

He must be bipolar , no one gets to be this cold hearted . A whole ruthless cold killer

He's not having mercy on these people , imagine the pain of having fingers and toes being cut on by one

Having your ears cut it , and he leaves you like that and goes to another

I would he dead by the time he gets to me honestly , because it'll be clear the same fate awaits me

Tyler : Jase the acid

Can this just be the last kill while I'm here , and I actually want to leave tomorrow

Jase hands him the acid , he takes it and pours it over their feet heading up . He just wants them to feel the pain , I wonder what they've done to him

We watch their bodies slowly fading to nothing , like absolutely nothing

Me : these adults are going to haunt us

Jase laughs , but I'm being real right now .
We might have not killed them

But we were just here watching , seeing this lunatic kill them

Jase : crime scene cleaned

Tyler burns the acid bottle along with the cutter he was using until all is gone

Tyler : fuck I need to shut my eye

We all leave heading back to the palace ,
part ways when we arrive going into our
sleeping quarters

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I wake up and he's just staring at me , he's
very creepy right now

He moves my hair off my face , and still says nothing . I don't know how long he's been awake , because of that time he takes before talking after waking up

Tyler : and she's awake

Okay so he's talking , he must have long woken up then

And I feel like I've been sleeping forever , it's surely the next day today

I've missed school for two days now , I need to get back on my feet

This is my last year I can't afford to slack , if
I want that financial aid

And I can't help but be worried about
Princess as well

Where is she ? And is she okay or what ?

Me : I felt like you weren't here

He gives me his famous seconds smile

Tyler : not possible , where could I possibly
not be here ?

Me : I don't know

Tyler : I've been here sweetheart

He's so assuring that I even feel crazy for what I said

Maybe he just wasn't holding me that's why I felt like he wasn't here

Me : where is your sister ?

Tyler : sweetheart don't worry about her , she's going to be okay and you'll see her soon

Me : okay

Tyler : do you remember you said you love me ?

How can I forget that ?

Me : don't tell your girlfriend I said that

Tyler : we have a date as soon as you're okay

Yes ignore the girlfriend part

Me : I want to go to school tomorrow

Tyler : are you ready for that?

Me : I can never be ready , but I need to

Tyler : okay but you're not leaving here

Me : did you not hear what I said ?

Tyler : and I fixed it

I don't understand how he can fix people
accusing me of witchcraft

.

.

.

Tyler

The guys are still here , though Jase is to leave tomorrow morning

I just spent the day with my heart , doing nothing just cuddling and talking

She's back to sleeping now , I don't know how I feel about her going back to school but I understand the importance of it

We're in the hut with my parents , the twins are still in the water

This is starting to be worrying , but the parents as chilled as ever so I guess I have no reason to worry as well

Mom : Ty I asked you to do something for me

Me : I know

Mom : and ?

Me : she'll come tomorrow

Ask me why I'm not telling her that she's here , I also don't know why

Mom : I hope so , I really think she needs help

Me : I understand mommy

Dad : you're too old for that

I laugh , and help my mother up . We all
walk out

Dad : let's have a word

We stay behind a bit

Dad : the seer us worried

Me : of ?

Dad : there's been too much blood spilled
on this land as of late

Me : oh ?

Dad : don't do that Tyler

Me : why are you telling me this ? Did he say it was me ?

Dad : no he doesn't know , but he's seen of the blood

Me : okay then , let your people stop throwing around unfounded rumours

Dad : unfounded rumours ?

Me : I hope you know that your guard and royal council , were out of line with their accusation

Dad : wait this is about that girl ?

Me : I don't kill for fun , I don't do it because I'm bored

Dad : Tyler you've killed the royal council , and a guard ?

The reality of that shocks him

Me : and I would do it again if I have to

Dad : what were you thinking ? How are we going to explain 8 dead people ?

Me : make it 9 , and there's nothing to explain when there's no bodies

He gives me a disapproving look , he's just being a king right now and nothing else

Me : I don't know about you , but I'll do anything and everything for the woman I love . I hope that's clear Manzini , and I won't have any hesitations

I am my father's son and that's that

.

INSERT 10

Tyler

I had to go uniform shopping this morning ,
and I'm thankful I got everything

Although I'm still against her going back but
she's in her last year she can't miss much
anymore

She's getting ready , I'll drop her off at school when she's done

We're having breakfast with the guys Jase is about to leave after this

Jase : why are you not eating ?

That's addressed to Sambulo , and it's a shocker he's not eating

Because he's always chewing something in his mouth

He's quitting smoking , that's why he always chews

Sambulo : I have no appetite

Me : oh

Jase : a whole you ?

Sambulo : don't be like that okay

Jase : even last night you didn't eat anything

Sambulo : Jase how do you expect me to eat , when I saw a man being forced to swallow his own testicles ?

He's still there ?

Me : are you being for real right now ?

He pushes his plate away from him

Sambulo : I think I need counselling

Jase : you traumatized this boy

They have got to be kidding me right now

Sambulo : I think from right this moment
I'm a vegetarian

Jase laughs , and I can't wrap my head
around Sambulo's reaction right now

A text from Ledi comes through she's done and ready to leave

Me : Jase I'm heading out , you staying behind ?

Jase : no , will you drop me off at the airport?

Me : might as well

Sambulo : leave me behind

He say shaking his head

Me : I wasn't planning on taking you
anywhere . And while you're at that therapy
talk , leave my name out of it

Jase and I get up

Jase : or you might just you know

Sambulo : you don't kick a man when he's
down

Me : it's actually dog

Sambulo : but I'm a man

Me : then act like it , snap out of this

We walk out leaving him there , he'll probably run away from the meat

Since he's now a vegetarian

- .
- .
- .

Prince

I hate water with everything in me , and I wake up I'm inside water . The pool in the royal hut , next to me it's my sister and she seems to be sleeping

I shake her a bit , but she's out of it . And
very much cold , more like freezing ice cold

But I know she's still alive , I feel he heart is
still beating

We just have that twin thing where we
know when one of us is not okay

And now I'm feeling like myself , meaning
that there's nothing wrong with her

I feel like I've been in deep sleep for a while,
I get out of the water . I'm just in shorts
there's even nothing here for me to wear

I don't even know how long we've been in here , it feels like quite a while

I open the door and walk out , it's just the guards and maidens out here

I walk to the main house , and find my mother in the lounge

Me : my queen

The happiness on her face can't even be explained

Mom : you're okay

She tries to get up but I walk to her

Me : relax

She smiles

Mom : how are you feeling Manzini ?

Me : so confused but can we talk , I'm hungry though and I feel like I need a bath

Mom : okay go take a bath , I'll ask for food to be prepared . Then we can talk

Me : okay

Mom : your sister is still out of it ?

Me : I think so , what happened to her ?

Mom : go bath so we can talk

Me : okay

I go to my chamber , my mother is the most understanding parent that's my view

Hopefully when I explain what happened , she will understand

I just hope there's nothing wrong with me like I'm bewitched or cursed

I take my bath and just put on casual clothes

I go back to join my mother , and she has a feast . I dish up for myself

Me : so right....

Mom : can you just finish eating ?

Me : I can't

Mom : Prince you're just disgusting

Me : okay thank you

We laugh

Me : so I was there at the hotel , I couldn't be with everyone else inside . I kept getting hot and cold , next thing I was on the floor right at the balcony . I went into the room I kept for myself , locked myself in there . To be honest I was scared , because I didn't feel like myself at all . My heart was beating against my chest , like it was going to pop out . I don't know what happened , it's like my back was opening . Next thing I knew , wings were coming out of my back . I couldn't handle the pain , it was so unbearable . I got weak and after that I remember nothing at all

That sounded crazy

Mom : it's okay baby

She says so warm , I look at her

Mom : don't give me that look

Me : you don't think I'm crazy ?

She laughs

Mom : you're my son , you can never be crazy . Don't worry everything will make sense on its own okay , and daddy will talk to you . So you'll be fine

Me : was it a dream ?

I know it wasn't but a whole being growing wings doesn't sound human at all

Mom : no it wasn't a dream

Now I'm finished , and I think I'm yet to be finished further

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I thought I've had worst days but nothing like today

I even regret coming back here , but I can't afford to fail

And the work load that was just waiting for me , just two days it felt like two months

But I see that and I can cover for it

What I can't take nor handle it's the stares , finger pointing and the whispers

Worse the things writing in the toilets about me

I'm called every name you can think of , there's ugly pictures

What hurts the most is being called a witch,
as if I don't already have a lot dealing with

When I was done with my classes I sat
behind the school hall and cried

It was so hard to hold myself in front of
everyone , at some point I even shed tears
in class

And that turned into a joke as soon as soon
as the teacher was out

With this thing lingering over me , I guess its
what's everyone is saying at the village .
This makes me wonder if I'm still welcomed
at the palace

All these talks have just put some fear into me , village people never take kindly to such

What if I'm torched alight because I'm supposedly a witch ?

The way I keep hurting over me over again , I'm even failing to pray . Makes me wonder how God would even answer me , when I have no words to utter

But just tears addressed to him , does he hear those as well ?

What have I done , like who have I wronged so much that I deserve all this much pain and hurt ?

Haven't I cried and shed enough tears ?

Someone is calling my name , and I know
the cold voice very well

I try to wipe my tears but it's useless , these
tears keep falling

Tyler : sweetheart I've been calling looking
for you

I lift my head and look at him , he just
crouches down as soon as he sees the tears

He hugs me , I sob so loudly against his
chest

Tyler : I'm here now

Can I just not loose this one thing I have in him ? Because of my troubles and problems

Will he just bare with me ?

-
-
-

Tyler

I was so right that she shouldn't go back there , now she's gone back like 10 steps back

Coming back she wasn't stopping with the tears , I ended up drugging her . I hate it because then , she'll get hooked on these things

But she was just breaking my heart , and couldn't even tell me why she was crying so much

Me : tell me something

Sambulo : you're done with killing people right ?

Me : stop , these private colleges do they take new students at this time of the year

Sambulo : I don't think so , wouldn't the person have missed out on 3 semesters already ?

Me : Sambulo you just have white parents don't get smart with me , I need space for someone to finish last term of matric

Sambulo : oh , but I still think it's too late .
But you know everyone has a price

Me : get on with it then

Sambulo : right

I walk into the house , and the sleeping Prince is awake

Me : you still fine ?

Prince : you see I'm fine , please don't start with me

I chuckle and sit down

Me : where is your half ?

Prince : still enjoying some water sleep

I laugh

Me : that's nice

Mom : what would have been nice , is you doing what I asked you

Not this again

Me : ma (mom)

Mom : Tyler what is so hard with just doing that ?

Me : she's not okay

Mom : I need to talk to her Tyler

Okay , mommy raising her voice that's not good

Me : tomorrow morning I promise

She walks past us

Prince : and that ?

Me : nothing that concerns you boy

He laughs

Prince : she's not happy with you , just do what she asked you to do

Listen to this boy , Ledi is still healing her wound . But I can't upset my mother

I'll speak with her tonight , and tomorrow morning I'm certain she's not going to school

Hopefully she agrees to talk to my mother

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 11

Tyler

I look at this beautiful person of mine , and I hate everything that she's just going through

She's doesn't deserve any of this , she has cried enough and I just want it all to stop

Me : sweetheart

I'm afraid to touch her , because I don't know what triggered her to cry today

She might just get a scare , if I dare touch her

Me : sweetheart

She turns slowly and looks at me , she's so red and her eyes are swollen

Me : you have to eat

Ledi : I'm not hungry

Me : you're not starving yourself in my presence , get up and eat

She just stares at me , and her eyes are painful the way she keeps blinking

Me : please

It takes a while but she gets up and sit

Ledi : don't

Me : no you don't

Puppy eyes don't work on me

Me : you didn't want to eat , so I'm feeding you because I'm the one who wants you to eat

She smiles , at least we're going somewhere. I feed her until she's done

Ledi : you must stop this I'm not 5

Me : I'm like 6 years older than you , so that makes you 6 to me

Ledi : what ?

She's so confused and I'm confused myself

Me : we need to talk

I put the tray away , and get on the bed with her . She's fiddling with her fingers

Ledi : you want me to leave ?

Me : leave uyaphi ? (Where are you going)

She shrugs her shoulders

Me : are you going to tell me what happened at school ?

Ledi : they were nasty

Me : nasty how ?

Ledi : everyone was just talking about me , and they said not so nice things about me in the toilets

What is this ? 1990 . So school kids do this nonsense of writing about each other in school toilets ?

Me : I want you to stop going to school ?

Ledi : I can't , this is my only chance of ever making something out of myself . My life is a mess and school is the only last messed up thing , I can still make right . If possible , I can't stop going to school

Me : I'll take you to a college

She shakes her head

Me : what's that ?

Ledi : Ty I'm not your burden nor your responsibility , I have no one right now and that's the reality of my life . I can't depend on you , I don't want that . What happens when this goes sour ?

Me : nothing is going to go sour here , and don't make decisions for me at all . I'm a grown ass man , I want you to be my burden and my responsibility . So don't tell me that

She goes quite , I think we're understanding each other

Ledi : are you leaving ?

Me : me ?

Ledi : yes , like Princess said you stay in
Cape town

Me : she did huh ?

Ledi : so ?

Me : I'm leaving yes , but I'll be back for
you. Remember you still have to overcome
these , so I can put a ring on it

She smiles , I settle fine and cuddle her . We stay in quite for a while

Ledi : I don't want you to go

Finally

Me : you don't ?

Ledi : I don't , how will I go back and live with those people ?

Me : you're not , you'll stay here

Ledi : without you ?

Me : Princess will be here

Ledi : don't you understand that right now I think no one wants me here

Me : I have no idea what you're talking about , but I want you here

Ledi : and you're leaving

Me : I'm still here , I'm not gone yet . And I won't be gone forever

We go back to the silence now

Me : the queen wants to talk to you about the shadow

She has quite a reaction , and it's not a good one

Ledi : did you tell her I'm here ?

Me : no

Ledi : don't

Me : why not ?

Ledi : the same shadow I know nothing about has people calling me a witch Ty

Me : there was a whole misunderstanding there with your encounter with her , my mother is a medium

Ledi : a what ?

Me : a psychic medium , she's able to communicate with spirit . She wants to see you only because she wants to see if she can be able to communicate with the shadow

Ledi : so it's a dead person ?

The exaggeration of that

Me : I don't know , but please just see her tomorrow morning

Ledi : will you be there ?

Me : yes

Ledi : okay , don't tell your mother I've been staying here

I smile , and kiss her forehead . She agreed that's all that matters , and my mother can get off my back about this

.
. .

Prince

Breakfast is something else this morning ,
Ledi is here . And she doesn't look good ,
she has a dark mark under her eye

And what do you know she's in Tyler's
clothes again

I hate what my mind is doing right now , can
it be my brother has taken her ?

How will I survive with her as sister in-law ,
while I hold this love for her ?

This is a disaster in the making , and only
I'm seeing it

My parents are so oblivious to this , surely
I'm not the only one seeing these clothes
are Tyler's

Dad : I have errands , I need to go

Mom : remember the doctors appointment

Dad : I'll be back before then

Something strange has happened here , all the council members are gone like disappeared with the wind

And two royal guards as well , no one knows where they are or what happened to them

My father is in and out of meetings , trying to find out what happened

He leaves and the rest of us finish eating

Me : can I go back to school tomorrow ?

Beats me why Ledi is not at school , clearly
I've missed a lot

Mom : it's Friday tomorrow , why not just
go on Monday ?

Me : I've already missed a lot

Mom : a day won't make a difference

Me : I don't know about that

Mom : I don't need to go crazy

No pregnant woman needs to be crazy

Me : apologies my queen

Tyler is so amused right now

Mom : you go to school Prince it's fine

Me : thank you

And it's my queue to excuse myself from
this table

.

.

.

Dikeledi

With just the three of us left , I don't know how to feel nor react right now

I'm scared of what the queen will say , and I must say I'm very much bothered about this shadow

What is it , who is it and what does it want from me ?

This is scary , like how can I be okay or at peace knowing there's a shadow that's following me ?

With everything that Tyler said last night , my mind is all over the place

But seeing that I missed school , I don't even know if this means I agree with what he said

All I know is that I hate my life to the core right now , nothing is going right

And the more I pray , the more it feels like God is not listening

The more I cry it makes me look like I'm weak , and I'm just being annoying crying about everything and anything

The more I ask for a way out , it makes me look like nothing but a complainer

Tyler is here now yes , but he knows nothing about me

I'm sure the second he finds out about the rape , he will run so fast and never look back

I feel like I'm being double standards to him, because I'm hiding things from him

And I feel like that's not fair , because I'm making him see a person I'm really not

Here I am in denial , but when I face the truth I know just how deeply invested I've just been to him

I love Tyler , and I can't even run away from that . I love him , and heading towards to being in love with him

Queen Royalty : Ty excuse us

Why now ? Because I need him here

Tyler : like leave ?

Queen Royalty : yes

She can't do this to me , I hold Tyler's hand under the table . He holds mine even tighter

Queen Royalty : you two are really doing this ?

Tyler : no

Queen Royalty : last I checked , she was Princess's friend

Tyler : which she still is

Queen Royalty : where do you enter into all of this ?

Now I feel like telling him to leave , because it's so uncomfortable with the queen asking these questions

And it's uncomfortable for me not him

.

.

.

Tyler

My mother finally let's go of her suspicions ,
we all go to the garden

She's the one who asks for that , for
whatever reason I don't know

And we sit down on the grass , the things
women make us do

Mom : don't look so scared

I get why Ledi is scared

Mom : you wanted him to be here , just
know that when spirit comes up and they
say things I can't hold back

Ledi nods , and she's so not sure about this .
And it's because of the rape thing , the fact
that she maybe things I don't know . I kept
quite because I only wanted her to be the
one telling me , for her to be able to open
up to me

Without me pestering her about it , but we never got there and here we are now

Mom : your mother is not at peace , and she's the one that's been following you everywhere as a shadow . Because she's not even buried in the ground , her remains lies at the river .

Ledi doesn't know what to make of this , and I don't blame her at all

But now I'm here like , should I even be here ? There's a presence that's hovering here

Mom : she's here , see that

She points to a bird that's not far from us ,
and it's a rare kind of a bird

Ledi : I....I always see this bird . Form time to
time

Mom : you're her daughter , she comes to
you in peace . That's why you'll never see
the shadow , but she's angry at everyone
else . That why they see her as a shadow

Me : what did we do to her ?

Mom : Tyler this is not about you

Okay now I know , I shouldn't have asked

that or even ask anything for that matter

Mom : do you feel that ?

Ledi : the chills on my arms ?

Mom : yes

Ledi : I do , and I feel them from time to time . Actually it's a thing that happens every day

Mom : she says that's her validating that she's always with you

The bird starts chirping but the strange

thing is that it's like it's crying

Mom : she says she's sorry that she wasn't able to protect you from her , she can't do anything because of the water where she is. She can't fight , that's why she failed to protect you . Her shadow is the only thing that's able to follow you , but it can't do much as well to that extent . She says saving you from the car , was just an instinct because she was following you when you were running . He hurt you and took your innocence , made you a wife while his slept in the next room . She watched but couldn't do anything , she's asking for you to forgive her for failing to protect you against him

Now she's crying , the day I see this woman stop crying would be the greatest day of my life ever

And the fact that the rape is out , she's pulling away from me . And I hate it

I don't see her any different than how I've always seen her since day one

Ledi : he hurt me

Mom : I know and I'm sorry

Now I have to deal with two important women in my life crying

Ledi : now I'll never be the same , what man will ever love a woman damaged as me ? He is my brother , why couldn't he love me enough to protect me ? Instead he saw a vessel he can use to pleasure himself . I hate him and I hate myself more , what is so wrong with me that he saw it was okay to do that ?

I've seen Ledi cry and believe me you it's one painful thing to see , but this right here it's heart breaking

Mom : I can't do this

She's also crying , and I get why . But she

started this can't she just finish ? For Ledi's sake

I beg her with my eyes , she pleads but I'm also pleasing

I don't want Ledi to revisit this trauma again, can it just be done today ? So she can focus on healing

My mother nods wiping her own years . I hug Ledi but she doesn't hug me back , she wants to push me off

But I'm not letting go , she's not getting rid of me this easily

Ledi : if she's not the one we buried , then who did we bury ?

Okay now we're moving forward

Mom : it wasn't her , your mother was murdered by your brother . He's the one who threw her in the river

What was so wrong with that boy ? He killed his own mother

Now I know I'm a worst case scenario , but I'll never kill my own mother no matter what . But then I'm not a rapist either , so I'm one hell of a case better than he is

Ledi : can't I do something to put my mother to rest ?

Mom : don't worry I'll help you with that , but she needs you to have peace and healing forgive

Ledi : no , I will never forgive Thato ever

Mom : baby forgive yourself for feeling this way for having this hate towards yourself . You did nothing to anyone , don't carry burdens that are not yours

I don't see how she'll do that , because she's really isolating herself from everything

Mom : I think this is enough , Ty see that she's okay . And just know this he's dead

Ledi doesn't even look like she cares , my mother knowing Thato is dead

Does it means she knows I'm the one who killed him ? She'll have me for breakfast

She gets up and leaves us , it's soon after the bird comes closer and leaves as well

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I wasn't so ready for any of that , makes me wonder just wicked Thato was

Whoever killed him if he was really killed did the world a favour

If only they killed him much earlier , a whole lot of pain would have been saved for me

Tyler walks in , I feel his presence and I've been avoiding him all afternoon

Yet I'm in his room , how stupid of me . I don't want to know what he thinks of me , now that he knows the truth

But I also want to feel his presence next to me , that's why I'm in his hoodie

Cuddling his pillow , crazy I know . I'm afraid now that I'm about to lose the one sane thing in my life

Tyler : to have so much disrespect , cuddling a pillow on my bed while I'm right here

He takes the pillow and throws it down , getting on the bed . He cuddles me and now it's perfect

Tyler : I hate what you're doing , pushing me away like this . It's not fair at all

Okay now he's sulking and it's so cute , if only I had the courage to look at his face

Tyler : you're not getting rid of me , now you've spoken it's time to seek healing . I can't wait to wife you

He's still there , he keeps pecking my forehead

Me : don't make me feel like everything is alright

Tyler : everything is not alright , you're hurt so how can everything be alright ? You're not okay and that's understandable

Me : did you hear anything I said Ty ?

Tyler : okay something very important ,
sweetheart I think you need to find a cute
name to call me with . Because this Ty it's
not working , worse my parents call me Ty
when they're not pleased with me so it's
not working

Really ? Finding a cute pet name to call him
with is important

We're not even there with each other ,
honestly I don't even know where we are

Tyler : and there's nothing you said I didn't
hear , nor I didn't know

Me : what ?

Tyler : I always new , the morning you woke up in my chamber I knew

What's the meaning of this ?

Me : then why did you keep quite ?

Tyler : it wasn't my portion to say , I wanted you to trust me enough to tell me

Me : I'm sorry

And the water works

Tyler : don't do that with me , you owe me
no apology nothing

But this changes everything , if he always
knew . Then he was comfortable being with

He still said everything he said knowing ,
does it mean it changed nothing between
us ?

Tyler : you're stuck with me , I'm going
nowhere .

The pecks everywhere on my face , causing
me to giggle

He hugs me tightly , I swear I love these tight hugs . It's like he wants to conjoin us , and it's crazy that I even feel this way . But I love it

Tyler : you know I think we should go on that date

Me : really ?

Tyler : yes , see I want us to be so together through this whole healing

Isn't he just God sent ? And Argh there's that Enhle , can she just forgive me .

Because I'm taking her man right now , and I plan to keep him as mine alone

If he can be this Tyler to me , knowing what I've been through . What a fool would I be to keep pushing him away

.

.

.

INSERT 12

Sambulo

She trails her hands all over me , the other one kisses me . I'm quick to pull out of the kiss

I don't just kiss anyone , a kiss sends a message and I'm not trying to send any message to both of them

I don't even know who they are , I just want sex and that's it

This yellow bone is so out to get me , she's reeling in for affection and that's not what I intend to give

I pull out and move away from both of them

Me : I wouldn't mind a show

I pour myself a glass of scotch

Girl 2 : what do you mean a show ?

Me : you two pleasuring each other

Girl 1 : I like

Me : well then get on with it

I sit down on the end of the bed , they kiss each other and it's the most sexiest thing ever

Their hands all over each other , squeezing and rubbing on each other's boobs . I don't care who say what , and don't let any men tell you otherwise

There's nothing disgusting about women
fucking each other

If anything it turns you on to your limits , as
much as they may condemn it . Most men
love that shit , and one of the most who do

The dark beauty fingers the yellow bone ,
their moans fill the room

They both lay , down the other on top of
the other

The yellow bone goes down on the dark
beauty , I don't know their names and I
didn't bother to ask because I didn't need
to know

She feasts on that pussy for dear life , my
dick throbs I stroke it to release the slight
pain

She moves up and they kiss for a while ,
before they get into a scissoring position

The hunger and lust on their faces , seeing
each other pussy's exposed like this

They move closer and fuck each other , this
pussy to pussy . Clit on clit shit sound
insane, but damn it's a whole fucking
perfection

I get up and join in on the fun, the yellow
bone grabs on my dick . She gives me one

hell blowing blow job , while they're still
scissoring

.

.

.

Princess

I don't know how long I've been here , like I
have no idea at all . As much as it's nice
being here and all , I miss home . I miss my
family and I miss my best friend

I wonder if my mother has given birth yet ,
I'll be so sad if she has already

I wanted to be there when it happens , I'm
looking forward to being a big sister

So I wanted to be there so I can hold my
little one , maybe even get to name him or
her like Tyler did with us

Although I don't like his name's , and I
actually can't believe my parents let him get
away with it

We're already a Prince and Princess , those
didn't need to be our real names

I'm not learning much here , besides
spending time with the fallen queens

Hearing them tell me about the rule , it's all
fascinating no lie

But I miss my normal life back home , even
though I know now that nothing will ever be
normal

Grandma : you're lonely

There's nothing this woman misses , she
gets everything and she's never wrong

Me : I miss home

As much as I love and enjoy being here , and
I'm not a whole mundane human

I miss my mortal life and everything about
it, yes it'll be different now but it's fine

Home is home , it doesn't matter what is
what

Grandma : come

Really ? And here I was thinking she'll say I
can go home

I follow her grumpy as ever , but the smile I
put when I see that the portal is opened

She laughs

Me : I hope I did not offend you

I love them , and being here . But I want to go home , I won't lie about that

And surely they weren't planning to keep me here forever , this is home to them because they've fallen

I'm still very much alive

Grandma : we were just waiting on you to tell us that you're ready to go home

Now ways so I'm the reason I've been stuck here ? I thought they would tell me when it's time to go home

Serves me right for thoughting , because no one ever asked me to

Grandma : remember what I told you

She said a lot , and I can only hope that I'm ready for all of it

Grandma : any portal of water , you can summon us and we'll answer . Either one of us is here to serve you

Me : I'll keep that in mind my queen

Grandma : and your first task awaits you

Already ?

.

.

.

Tyler

Sambulo still hasn't gotten back to me
about the college issue

I hope for his sake he will have something
for me end of today

Ledi hates missing school and staying home,
but this is for her sanity

And most importantly mine , because when
she's not okay I lose my mind

People end up dead , my father is already
gathering another council

All thanks to me for getting rid of the last
one , I want to stay out of these peoples
ways . And the only way I can do that is if I
keep Ledi away from them

I understand she can't miss much more than this , and that she wants to be done this year

She doesn't want to be left behind , so finishing next year is not an option

My phone rings and it's Jase , we're still in bed but I'm working

Money doesn't sleep , and now I have someone to take care of on a serious note

Me : yeah

Jase : the organ shipment has arrived

Shit , it can't be when I'm here . And I still planned to stay for a while

Me : it's early

Jase : I know , but there's nothing we can do now . It's here and we can't return it back

Me : fuck

This beautiful person next to me turns , and I can't have her hear such things

Jase : what to do in the meantime ?

Me : Abdul needs those things fresh Jase

Jase : I know

Me : get in contact with him , he has to be on the next flight he can find . Those can't go into the freezer

Jase : let me get onto it

I drop the call , working with incompetent people is a job on its own

I'm fuming now , if those organs go off . I've lost billions of the Mafia's . As much as I lead the families , I still take care of them . And I don't do mess ups it can't be me

Ledi : what's wrong ?

I turn my face and look at her , she's rubbing her eyes . Cutest thing ever

Me : good morning

I only hope she didn't get anything I said

Ledi : you okay ?

Me : stressed , I have to go back to Cape town

Ledi : I don't want you to go

I feel like I'm dealing with a 6 year old
indeed

Me : let's go on that date

Ledi : you're still leaving

Me : and I'll come back

She says nothing , I close the laptop and
face her completely

Me : the date ?

Ledi : tomorrow is perfect

Me : oh ?

Ledi : it's Friday today , who goes on a date on Friday ?

Me : we do

Ledi : we're not

A knock comes at the door , strange because even maidens don't come to my chamber . I kiss her forehead , get up and open the door . It's my mother . Talk about getting caught off guard , I make sure to stand at the door so she doesn't come in

Me : mommy

I say with a smile

Mom : how is Ledi doing ?

Is this a trick question or what ?

Me : I ...think she's okay

I have to play it cool , I don't know who she feels . Especially after what she said yesterday

Mom : tell her to come see me

Why is she sending me like she knows ?

Me : I ..I will

She turns to walk away but turns and faces me before I close the door

Mom : you know I saw you two yesterday right ?

Me : saw us ?

Mom : don't hurt that child more than she's already been Ty , get rid of hoes if you want to commit . Because trust me I can tell you right now , she doesn't want to be one of

the hoes . She wants to be the one that gets it all , the man the love and the ring and everything that comes with it all

Me : yes

She walks away , and I've never felt so stupid like I have right now after saying that yes

My mother just got herself a daughter in-law , she's scolding me . Feels like I'm in high school all over again

- .
- .
- .

Prince

I couldn't miss school , so I came anyways
even though it's a Friday and all like my
mother said

Everything is just strange for me today , this
whole environment feels all new to me

Like it's something I don't know , I just don't
know how to explain this feeling

My father has promised that we'll have a talk soon , I understand that he's been busy

So it's understandable , and I'm not in a hurry . So I'll wait for him

Zamo : your girl is sulking

Me : because she thinks I was busy whoering around

And she's in for another thing if she thinks I'm going to beg her to act right

By the end of today someone else would be in her place

I'll never beg a women like never , unless if it's my mother or sister then yeah

Zamo : what's going on with you three ?

Me : us three ?

Zamo : you're like some kind of trinity , and you all missed school for days . One of you came for a day and she looked beaten up , and she never came back . You come back on the most odd day ever Friday , and it's like you're not even here . Let me guess the last one will come Monday , and she'll be stranger than you two

Me : wow dude really ?

He laughs

Zamo : you've even taken Ledi's ...

Me : shut up

Zamo : what's up with you three anyways ?

Me : we were dealing with a very personal matter

Zamo : okay hold back now , I know you haven't smashed her . So there's no way she's carrying your kid

Me : last I checked , she wasn't carrying anyone's kid

That's if she hasn't slept with Ty already , I'm sure he'll just get her pregnant on purpose

Zamo : see you're zoning out on me

Me : man just leave it okay , when the time is right and fine we'll return back to school

I don't know about Ledi though , I got to see what has been said about her . As much as I pulled my weight around and the prince card , and had toilets cleaned

It doesn't erase anything , and I'm not the schools favourite right now

But I don't give a fuck

-
-
-

INSERT 13

Princess

These people , how can they just leave me
all alone in this creepy hut ?

What if I drowned , while no one was
watching me ?

I walk out and it feels like it's been a while
since I've lost touch with reality

But also feels good to touch feet on this
land again

I don't know if I'm ready for what awaits
me, but I'm hoping to embrace this change

Voice : sleeping frog is awake

I turn back and it's my idiotic twin brother ,
he's in his school uniform

Makes me wonder how much I've missed
out , I don't see myself failing matric

Just because I couldn't finish , I don't want
to repeat again next year

And I have a feeling I won't be here for
much longer , don't know why I feel this
way

Maybe it has everything to do with what my
grandmother said

Me : I just had to see you first , before everyone else

Prince : I missed you too

He laughs , and I missed his crazy self much. But just looking at him I get a feeling I have to reprimand him

His heart is about to bleed and it won't be too nice

Me : I never said I missed you , not even by an inch

Prince : are you feeling okay ?

And he's all over my face touching me
everywhere

As if he's checking that I'm well and not
sick, he's trying to be cute but he's
annoying me

Me : you're so annoying

Prince : and I'm you

Me : like are you

Voice : stop it you two

I missed this melodic voice , and the baby bump welcomes me . The happiness , now the baby can come big sis is here

Me : my queen

Prince : my queen

Mom : you're back for what ? And already you're at each other's throats

Me : he started it

Mom : go get dry Princess , and stop pointing fingers

Me : my queen

I walk away from them

Mom : stop picking at your sister

Those words grace my ears , and it's
fantastic .

.

.

.

Tyler

With both the twins back home , the
parents are happy and we're all happy

The only sad person here is my heart , she
really doesn't want me to go

But I can't afford to stay here , as much as I
want to

Sambulo : you called ?

Me : I feel like snapping your neck right now

He moves back

Me : the next time I send you to do something , just do it . Leave fucking whores first okay

Sambulo : yes , right I got space at one of the colleges in Durban

Me : when you give me information , tell it all out

Sambulo : stop threatening me I heard you

He chuckles

Sambulo : there's space to start Monday , just know your pocket is going to feel this

Me : wasn't expecting anything less , so it's private right ?

Sambulo : yes

Me : send me everything and make sure it's before that Monday

Sambulo : just one mistake

Me : don't

We part ways and he's laughing , I walk into my chamber . And she's done getting ready for the date , looking stunning

Me : sweetheart

She looks at me smiling

Me : I don't wanna go out there with you

Ledi : why ?

Me : you're too beautiful , I don't trust anyone

She laughs

Ledi : maybe we can stay in , and just buy as bunny chows

Me : now ways , you'd like that wouldn't you

Ledi : it's less cheap , just add a bottle of coke to that and we're good to go

Me : no we're going out , you'll have all of that where we are going

I take her hand and we leave , she hasn't seen Princess yet even though she knows that she's back

.
. .
. . .

Dikeledi

Tyler the type to just take a walk though the park , and just talk

I never thought he's the kind , but it's just been amazing

Tyler : now why are you sulking ?

Me : I'm not

I hold his hand , and it shocks both of us that I initiated the touch

Tyler : let's get you this , it'll cheer you up

Me : you do understand that I don't need to be cheered up ? I'm okay

Tyler : this always cheers everyone up

We walk to the guy by the street , Tyler will never cease to amaze me

And he buys two bowls of ice-cream ,
Vanilla . Just perfect my favourite as if he knew

Me : we could have just shared one

He chuckles , I wonder how he sounds like when he laughs

Tyler : says someone who's already
consumed half the bowl

I want to laugh but I won't , he's not nice at
all

Me : that's not a nice thing to say

Tyler : right ?

Me : you're not supposed to agree with me

Tyler : you're confused , so please don't
confuse me with your confusion

I can't help it , I laugh

Voice : isn't this cosy , heh Tyler you're timing me with her

Yhoh not Enhle my people not Enhle , like now today . Did she have to ?

Enhle : and what do you know it's the same one you left me for

Tyler : I left you so ? Did you think you'll find a different one ?

Tyler is dissing Enhle so bad right now , she's not talking about what he's talking about

Enhle : have you no shame , you saw this man has a woman . Where is your self-respect ?

Me : don't come at me , he's your man

I'm a coward okay , I can't fight . As much as I want her man , I'm still scared of her beating me up

Tyler : why are you not fighting for me ?

He's out of his pretty mind

Me : I don't know how to fight

He's like what ?

Me : don't look at me like that

Enhle : yeiiiy wena , stop being cute with my man and stay in your lane

She's still coming at me , the girl is something else

Tyler : it was nice knowing you , and it was done but now it's done . And bare in mind we were nothing but just fucking . I don't do commitment with your kind

Eish , the girl has her jaw dropped

Tyler : bye

Enhle : you're doing me like this Tyler ?

This won't end well , can God just hear my cry this time around . I don't want to lose Tyler , even though I took him from his woman

Enhle : don't rejoice , he will do the same thing he's done to me . Karma is a bitch

Tyler : and it takes a bitch to know one

Ouch , and this is done . We leave heading to his car

Me : what a day

Tyler : you still love me ?

Me : love just doesn't go away , it doesn't fade just because your girlfriend said karma is coming for me

Tyler : I don't do girlfriends , and by the time karma catches up we'll be so far . It'll be too late for it to have an impact

I give up , does he take anything serious ?

Me : this is not going back to to the palace

Tyler : we're not going there

Me : oh ?

Tyler : we still have our date remember that

Me : wasn't that the date ?

Tyler : wait you did not

I laugh , because I thought we were having an out walk at the park and ice-cream .

That's still a date right ?

We finally arrive where we are headed , and I'm left all speechless

When I heard date I just thought a simple thing , not a whole restaurant at Margate

Tyler is something else , I never saw him as this kind to be this romantic

There's flowers and roses everywhere , I guess this is his kind and type of date

Not the park and ice-cream

Me : I'm even so underdressed for this

Tyler : you're stunning , your looks make up for anything . So worry yourself not , and those are not rags

What a charmer he is , he pulls the chair for me . I sit down

Me : thank you

Tyler : I want to do something right now

Me : what ?

He leans closer way too close , we're literally inhaling the same breath . I swallow hard

Tyler : this

His lips touch mine , and the feeling his touch always makes me feel comes back

Hot flushes everywhere on my body

Tyler : bare in mind , it's just me . The man you love and he loves you back

That's all I got

Me : you....you love me ?

Tyler : I'm in love with you

Am I not just too forward , I bring his face down . Wrapping my hands on his neck

I've never had a boyfriend before , and I've never kissed anyone

But how hard can it be ? If I bite him , he'll get over it and heal

- .
- .
- .

Prince

My sister asked to see me , right before our parents asked to speak with us.

But then the king had to rush out , we'll still talk if he's back in time

But if he's not , we'll talk tomorrow . We understand he's busy being king and all , having to still run some of his businesses

For some reason they want to talk to us together , I doubt we did anything wrong

Maybe it's about what happened on our birthday , and I really hope it's about that

There's too much confusion and I just need some clarity

Me : why am I here ?

Princess : it's about Ledi

Me : what about her ?

Princess : save your heart from the heartache because it won't end well for your Prince . She's in love with someone else , and that someone else being your big brother

I hate my life like honestly , when did it get here ? Tyler has been in Cape town all along, I've been here . And few seconds already she's in love with him

Me : did she tell you that ?

Princess : I saw it

Me : you saw it ?

Princess : yes and it might sound crazy and all but it's the truth . Please stay away because the end results of this , won't be pleasing for you

Me : I have no idea what you're talking about

She smiles shaking her head

Princess : keep saying that , but don't say I didn't warn you alright ? You're my brother I love you , and I'd hate to see you that way

She gets up and walks out , I feel like breaking something right now

The signs were there , I saw them but to believe it ? And worse she's been here quite a lot

I'll hear this from the horse's mouth

.

.

.

Dikeledi

When I hear the words “my mother wants to talk to you” I feel like the ground can just open up and swallow me

We got back from our nice date , and he just had to tell me that

His mother scares me , she’s the queen for heaves sake . This woman has a personality that’s too strong

Queen Royalty : thank you for seeing me

As if I had a choice , the queen calls you and you answer

Queen Royalty : I want us to talk about something here , and I want you to not just hear me . But understand me as well

Okay this sounds serious

Queen Royalty : I have nothing against you , or your relationship with my son

She knows about that ? Or she just means relations in general ?

Queen Royalty : I know my son , and he's in love and that's all good . And I see you love him , and it's only a matter of time you heal. And you'll fall in love with him as well

I sweat everywhere , she knows

Queen Royalty : what I don't like is you two cohabitating in my palace

Lord bury me right now , she also knows that I've been here all this time

Queen Royalty : Tyler is Africa's son through and through , and he's following right at his father's feet

Do I still want to hear some more ?

Queen Royalty : He kidnapped me , well men who worked for him did . Yes it was a

mistake , but still had it not been him trafficking women that would have never happened

See me lifting my head now , and looking at her intensely

Queen Royalty : one day he came to where we were kept , and he gazed my ear with a bullet .

This woman is so calm and she's even smiling like this is some amazing love story

Queen Royalty : he took me to his home , kept me prisoner of course . But as time went by we both fell in love and here we are

today . I hated him for kidnapping me , but in a way I also thanked him for rescuing me

I don't understand her right now , how do you fall in love with someone who has put you through that ?

Queen Royalty : just a bit older than you , at 23 nearly 24 I fell in love . With one man who seemed to be so perfect and had it all . I found out he was married and with a child, when he deceived me about it . When I was breaking up with him , he didn't have none of that . And the whole thing ended up with me laying on the floor bleeding , and badly beaten . By a man I loved and thought he loved me back . See I wasn't crying because of anything I was saying that day , but I was

crying because of what you were saying .
Everything you said took me back to that
dark place I was once in before I met Africa .
I hated myself , I saw myself as nothing .
That no man was ever going to love me
broken and damaged as I was , I found love
I got loved the right way . And I saw that all
I carried was self hate more than anything .
I want to fix that mentality with you ,
already you're there . My son loves you , he
loves you beyond the rape . The hurt and
the brokenness , and all of that . Now
please break down , let your guard down
with him . He's the one man who will never
hurt you , if you let him love you right . Yes
it'll take time , but when he tries to be
closer to don't push him away . Don't hold
back on affection , the little that comes with

it . But don't make me a grandmother yet ,
you see I'm still very much fertile to make
babies myself

We laugh , but I'm quick to get a hold of
myself , because I'm crying . Her words are
really doing something in me

Queen Royalty : when you get to that point,
prevent use condoms take pills do anything
to avoid babies . And let's stop with the
cohabitating in my palace , If Tyler wants a
wife next to him every night . Tell him to
marry , tonight you're moving back to your
quarter nicely right ?

Me : yes my queen

Queen Royalty : I'm glad we had this talk

I'm more glad more than she knows , like she has no idea what she's just done for me right now

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 14

Tyler

So someone moved out of my chamber last night , apparently we're cohabitating in the palace

Right after she came from her talk with my mother , I got very suspicious

And I hope my mother didn't offend her in any way , I love these two women

And I want them to get along , I can't have my mother not liking my wife . I'd die

I begged and begged , because I'm leaving later today I wanted to have her in my arms all night

And she wasn't having any of that , but who am I ?

I also didn't have any of that , 10 minutes after she left I followed her right back

And I didn't leave until she let me in

Ledi : you have to leave

Me : you don't just get rid of me that easily

Ledi : I'm not getting rid of you

I know exactly what she means , but I'm moving away from it

Me : because you can't , I'm stuck with you
and that's that

Ledi : do you understand that I'm saying
leave the room , go to yours

Me : I don't want to

Ledi : hah

Me : don't say that , you sound like that
annoying bird

How can she get angry at me ? She just
can't instead she'll laugh at me

I hold her tight , plant kisses everywhere on her face landing on her lips

And we kiss , she's not there yet , but I appreciate that she's opening up

And deep inside I know it's still too soon , but I want her to be my woman and not have fear on me as a man

Me : I'm so in love with you

Ledi : are you a kisser or you just like bothering my lips

I smile she returns it back

Me : I didn't know I was a kisser until I
kissed you

Ledi : so it's a newly self discovery thing ?

Are they all like this or its just mine ?

Ledi : please behave yourself , no more
oEnhle

I chuckle

Me : I'm always behaved

Ledi : Ty I'm serious

Me : the name again

Ledi : it's your name

Me : sweetheart come on

Ledi : fine , but please behave . I can't deal with other women

Me : you won't deal with any other women, I won't degrade you like that

Ledi : you better not , and the queen doesn't want any other woman here

She's red blushing saying all this , and suddenly I want to retract my words

Me : she gave you the green card ?

Ledi : a whole signed and sealed

I'm loving this , because she's getting used to me and being herself

Me : you don't say

Ledi : I'm telling you

Me : let me marry you already

And I'm the joke she's laughing at

Me : please take care of yourself for me

And she sees that now I'm serious , and she becomes soft as well

Ledi : I will

Me : everyday we talk , doesn't matter what time of the day or night it is

Ledi : call me

I'm about to go crazy here

Me : how about we just call each other

Ledi : I don't have the means

Me : you have a phone allowance

Ledi : you can't provide and I use it on you

And we can advocate for ourselves , what a nice

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I don't wish to see him leave like this , but I know this is not his place

It's not his life , he belongs to the city . I'll just have to adjust now without him around

Tyler : look here , there's a driver Qaphela . He's strictly to drive you everywhere you want to go . He will take you to college tomorrow , and be sure to bring you back .

I nod , all this college thing is scary . I'm used to high school , and now I have to adjust

Tyler : can there be no problem between you two , because I'd hate to kill him

Me : Ty

The eye I get

Me : sorry the name

Tyler : there's a card of mine , Princess has it ask her to give it to you . Use it for anything that you need okay , and remember this distance doesn't mean anything . It's just distance and a few hours flight journey . You love me and I'm in love with you , this is nothing

Me : fix that

Tyler : what ?

Me : you're in love with me and I love you

Tyler : that's not what I said but , I'm in love with you

Me : I'm in love with you

Tyler : I knew it , you couldn't have courted me unless you did

Me : class punk

He brings me closer and we kiss , I'm not entirely comfortable but I know it's him

And it's not like Thato kissed me or anything like that , so this is better . I fear when we have to make love

Voice : guys please stop

No ways , I pull away from him but he brings me back

Tyler : what do you want ?

Princess : I've been back for two days and haven't seen my friend , because you're busy hovering her

Tyler : she's my woman you get the difference

Princess : we there ?

Tyler : way over there

Princess : I could hug you , but you smell of him right now

Isn't she crazy

Me : I missed you two

Princess : and girls night is what we need

Me : right

For gossip , on this relationship I know . And
I just want to know where she's been , and
if she's all good now

Princess : I see you're saying goodbye and
I'll leave you to it , don't make her cry

She leaves , and now I really have to say
goodbye

.

.

.

Prince

My big brother has left , and to my surprise Ledi came back to the palace after coming back from the airport

I wanted to ask Tyler about what Princess said , but he would have told me where to get off

And that he's not my mate nor my friend so I can't ask him nonsense

Which left Ledi , she's that open and I doubt she'll lie

If something really is going on between them , she will just tell me outright

I knock into her quarter , and she opens the door

Me : hi

Ledi : Prince

Me : can we talk ?

Like the decent girl she is , she steps out

Me : how are you ?

Ledi : I'm fine and yourself ?

Me : can't complain

Ledi : mhm okay

Me : can I ask something ?

She gives me a confused look instead of an answer

Me : not to offend you

Ledi : it's okay , just ask

Me : are you and Tyler an item ?

Her expression is just blank , and I don't know what's the meaning of this

Ledi : item ?

Me : like dating

Ledi : yes we are dating , I don't know about the item though

Damn , and she's firing shorts being polite

Me : I see

Ledi : is that all ?

I nod , obviously I'm hurt . She walks past
and I touch her arm

Ledi : Prince I told you to never do this
again

Me : I'm sorry

I move back even further than she's moved
from me

Me : Ledi I like you okay , and maybe it's
even safe to say I love you

Ledi : stop right there

Me : it's not even convenient , I've always felt this way about you

Ledi : convenient or not , Prince I don't see you that way . I've never even looked at you any closer to that , like ever . You've always just been Prince , and that's who you'll always be

Talk about killing a guys ego , finish like without redemption

Me : you're hurting me you know

Ledi : it's Mjolo the pandemic , now it doesn't break hearts . It goes to the back , and settle fine on your spinal cord it leaves

you paralysed . See Mjolo will take you to Spain , just that the S is quite

Fuck

Ledi : you'll be fine , I'm in love with your brother . Please get over this , and hopefully I'll never have to mention to conversation to him

She walks back inside her quarter , I'm left defeated . How does one get up from this ?

.

.

.

Princess

You can't miss the nervousness between Prince and I right now

I think we're just scared of the unknown , and the little we maybe know

Dad : don't look so scared , no one is scolding anyone here

Mom : we just want to talk to you two about what happened on your birthday that's all

Dad : we know you have a lot of questions , and we will answer them right after you listen and hear to what we tell you . It's not unusual for royals to posses some kind of

gifts and powers , some are good some are bad and curses yes and some just happen to be all that . I'm sure you noticed the difference that happened to both of you , there's nothing to fear . This has been from generation to generation of Batlokoa . Your aunt Asante and cousin Liyana carry almost what you have , only difference is that you posses all the powers and gifts of Batlokoa . Because you're to be queen there

Me a queen ?

Mom : we aren't expecting for the change to happen so fast , your aunt was 21 when it happened to her . You're only 18 that's why it even took us by surprise , we were supposed to tell you before time . I guess

not knowing when it'll happen just beat us
to it

Me : but I'm too young to be queen

Mom : you're a Manzini , and a product of
the fallen queens . There's no such thing as
being young my baby

This is what I was feeling , that I won't be
here much longer . I have to leave for
Botswana as soon as possible

Tears stream down my cheeks

Mom : it's okay kaManzini , you'll be fine
my baby

Me : but ma (mom)

Dad : you won't be alone , your brother
can't follow you yes . But he'll always watch
over you and protect you . He's the watcher
of your kingdom

The thought of being back in Botswana , all
alone without my family

I don't see myself surviving , how will I do
that ?

Me : I'm scared

Mom : I know

She brings me into a hug , and I'm not ready to lose this mother's love and comfort

Dad : your grandmother is there to help and guide you through everything , we're one with water . That's where we draw our strength and power . Prince there isn't much I can say to you , just that we need to go out to a veld . Where you can let your wings come out to their full capacity , so you can know their full power

Me : he has wings ?

I know nothing

Dad : he takes after me yes

Me : youyou have wings ?

Now everyone laughs at me , but I'm very serious like very

Dad : yes I have wings Princess

So we're really not mundane ? There's no way that normal human beings can be like this . Now I'm curious to know where all this comes from

.

INSERT 15

Princess

I just couldn't help myself , I had to get the scoop right from her

So I made sure we slept in my chamber , so I can get all the news

And imagine my shock , she's left school
and is now going to a college

But her news are making me forget about
my own news

Because those are just heavy in me I don't
wanna lie

I'm so not ready to be queen at just 18 , it
doesn't make sense to me at all

But then I got that I can't walk nor run away
from it

Ledi : and you ?

We're getting ready to leave , and I'm a bit sad that she won't be in the same school as me

But I understand why my brother saw it better to take her out

That was just toxic for her , and high school kids are very much brutal

They don't just forget , they don't let go . It was gonna be a while before the rumours die out

She doesn't need the negativity , with exams coming in a week

Me : me ?

Ledi : yes you know like what happened ?
I'm so sorry about everything , because I
know all that was my fault . I shouldn't have
suggested the whole thing to begin with ,
I'm sorry and I hope you can forgive me one
day

Wait , she thinks that she did harm by what
happened .

Now she's just hurting me , because she
actually helped me . If it wasn't for her .
Then I wouldn't have known anything ,
maybe the fallen queens were not going to
be able to talk to me

I take her hand into mine

Me : long story , one I don't even think you'll understand . But that water actually helped me more than it harmed me . So I thank you for that , if you didn't suggest the candle and water thing . I'd probably still be in dark about a lot of important things . You did nothing wrong

Ledi : are you sure ?

Me : yes I'm very much sure

Ledi : okay , that's a relief

Me : good , let's finish so we can go eat .
You don't want to be late

Ledi : right

Me : so , you get an allowance

She chuckles shaking her head , but not a a
no to me

Me : I mean this relationship

Ledi : don't go there please , it's just going
to be very awkward talking about your
brother to you

Me : but...

Ledi : no ways , if only it was another guy
not your brother

Me : I'm sad right now

Ledi : and don't worry you'll be fine , you
don't wanna start seeing your brother in a
funny light

As much as I saw this happening , between
of them first time I saw them together

I just didn't anticipate that it'll happen right
now like right away

But it has , and I hope they love each other truly , I'd hate for either one of them to hurt the other

.

.

.

Prince

Coming back from school , I made sure to stay away from the palace . At breakfast it was said that , Ledi will be staying with us for a while so yeah that's that for me now

I have to endure seeing her everyday and keep reminding myself she's dating my brother . I'm out by the outskirts , sitting on a stone by the hill

To be honest I'm just gathering up anger inside of me

I don't even know how to get rid of it , or why I'm even allowing it in the first place

Voice : you lack focus

I turn back startled and it's my father , but what is he doing here ? And how did he find me ?

Me : my king

Dad : I've been calling you , you should have heard me by now

Me : I didn't see you my king , and I didn't hear you call

Dad : I already said you lack focus , what's bothering you ?

Can I tell him this ?

Me : just girls stuff

Dad : girls or one in particular

Me : more precisely Ledi

He sits down next to me on the rock

Dad : don't mess with fate my boy , you'll get burnt . Both your brother and that girl love each other . Its not one sided , they feel the same towards one another . Protect your heart and stay away , most importantly . Remember Tyler is your brother , respect him enough to stay away from his girlfriend while he's away . I don't want any of my own blood , spilled by another all because of a woman . Trust me , he will forget that you're his brother . You'll just be a prey wanting what's his , and he will feel provoked . Tyler will not hesitate to kill for that girl , even if it means killing one

of his own . You're not a child now , there's nothing you need to be shielded from . Your brother is one dangerous man , who is very much ruthless and kills without mercy . I'll tell you this , he's the one who killed the guard and the royal council . All because they accused that woman of his of witchcraft . Don't let that fancy lifestyle fool you , he's anything but an upright citizen . Your brother is a Mafia leader , to all the Mafia families of Africa . That alone says a lot about the kind of man he is , you're his blood and yes he loves you . But if it comes down to it , she's the one he'll always pick over everything . And I say this because I know from myself , and I see myself ten times in Tyler . I've killed for your mother and if I ever find myself in a position to do it

again , I wouldn't hesitate . Focus on knowing your powers , there's still yet a long road for you to be king . But your sister needs you , and Batlokoa can't be without a protector . Stay away from this , and I hope to never repeat myself again . Stay away from Tyler's woman , she doesn't even see you that way . You'll find your own when it's your time , but this one is not yours . And don't think you'll use your powers to fight your brother , he will rip you apart my boy . You have no slight idea who Tyler is , and for your sake trust me you don't ever want to find out

With that being said he gets up and leaves

Me : shit

I don't know how to navigate everything
I've just heard right now

My brother a Mafia ? I know he's all scary
and that persona but this damn . I was not
expecting this

I wasn't ready at all , but I think I heard . Is
Ledi worth brother's spilling each other's
blood for ?

.

.

.

Princess

School is not the same without Ledi at all ,
but I'll get used to it

Just 6 weeks and I'll be done , so it's fine .
As much as I miss her

But I'm glad for her , she's settled fine at
the college

And the one thing that makes her more
happy , is that she hasn't even met one
student from our village

So her peace and sanity is safe there , and I
think that's what's important

I've asked her to move into my chamber ,
we might as well share

Her man is not here , surely she gets lonely
in that quarter alone

She's busy packing her clothes now , and I
just want to get us a snack

I walk in the main house , and my mother is
alone . This can be my chance

I finally get to have some time with my
mother alone . And I still want to talk to her,
about what happened in the past and
mostly about what's happening now

Me : my queen

She invites me in , I sit down next to her

Mom : what's wrong ?

She's so tired , you can pick up from her voice she doesn't even want to speak

Me : I just wanted to talk to you

Mom : it's okay , let's talk

Me : while I was underwater , grandmother said something to me

Mom : okay what ?

Me : that you're the one who can help me with this

Mom : more like guide you baby , I can't help you with anything

Me : yes something like that . See I've been having dreams I think , but then I'd also experience them in a more physical way . But when I woke up , I'd remember nothing and my mind would just be blank .

Mom : you experience the most hurtful and painful things women go through . But your

mind blocks everything your subconscious mind goes through .

Me : that's what grandmother said

Mom : she's a very wise woman of course

Me : but lately I remember everything , just that I see water and nothing else

Mom : what kind of water ?

Me : blue ocean like , but then it's like it's a in a river

Mom : you have a wounded spirit that's broken that you have to fix

Is this the task my grandmother was talking about ?

Me : will I be able to ?

Mom : remember you're not alone , the fallen queens are with you . So in all that you do , you're not alone

Me : thank you my queen

She smiles

Mom : your sister is hungry , she won't mind a snack as well

Me : how did you....

We just laugh because I did not tell her what I was in here to do

.

.

.

Tyler

I had to actually go do what my father pays me to do before attending to this

The guys are here , and I'm about to lose myself right now I can feel it

I take my phone and make a call before walking inside

Ledi : Hello

Me : you can't tell me you did not know it's me calling you

Ledi : you're the only person who calls me

Me : and yet we're still on that

She laughs slightly

Me : because I'm in love with you , how are you sweetheart ?

Ledi : I'm tired but well

Me : don't overwork yourself , you have exams coming . Your mind needs to be sane

Ledi : I hear you

Me : you finding the college fine ?

Ledi : everyone minds their own business there , so it's fine for me

Me : okay , let me go I'll call when I'm done

Ledi : okay , I love you

Me : I'm in love with you

She laughs

Ledi : you just had to

Me : I love you sweetheart

I hang up , because she never hangs the
phone like never

I walk inside

Me : and ?

Jase : the initial buyer is late , and these things can't survive another day

Me : I don't want to hear problems Jase

Jase : I got people who are looking for these things , give us the go ahead and we'll do the surgeries ourselves . We might be loosing a buyer but we not loosing any money here

Me : then get on with it

He nods going out with 3 other guys

Sambulo : they want to meet

Me : when ?

Sambulo : next coming few days

Me : and where is Khoza ?

Sambulo : still lurking around

Me : let's take a drive

We walk it and head to my car , I drive out to sea point . The aim is really not to eat , but we need to talk and right here in public

I need to know where these cops are , on my tail . And I'm not one to pay corrupt police men to watch over me , only those in high places

As much as Khoza is no threat to me , he can still taint me . And that's what I don't want

Sambulo : shit not this

And what do you know it's the crazy self made baby mama

Lizzy : how long did you think you can get away from me ?

Sambulo : I'll fucking embarrass you , stay away

We walk past and she grabs his arm . I look at her she moves back

Me : we don't do well with your kind , listen to him and stay away . You'll find yourself underground alive

She doesn't need to hear anything else she walks away so fast on her heel

Sambulo : please let me kill her

He's so capable but I won't justify this

Me : don't leave that baby an orphan kill
him too

He laughs

-
-
-

INSERT 16

TWO WEEKS LATER

Dikeledi

College is fine , I think I've adjusted enough
to keep myself sane

But I'm such a loner there , like no friends
whatsoever

Not that I mind , because I just want to
finish and be done with school . And that's
my only goal right now , not to make friends
and all that

Besides it's not like I even have the time ,
because everyday it's books and nothing
else

Even calls from Tyler are so limited , but the
way he's so understanding it's just so
amazing

He doesn't pressure me at all , the little
time I give him he appreciates it

And I try by all means to accommodate him
into my busy schedule

He's also busy as well , like in the past two
weeks he's been out of the county like
three times

Now that's too much , but I give him the same understanding he gives me

Overall I think our relationship is working pretty much fine , way better than I even anticipated it to

He's 24 I'm only 18 the age gap difference , it kinda scared me a bit

He's been around , he's lived and obviously he's much more matured than I am

But I think what gives us the balance , is that he doesn't treat me like a child

But I'm his equal , his partner . And by all means he keep the communication going

No matter how busy he is , he will make a one minute phone call

I know his schedule , I might not know in detail what he's doing or busy with at that moment

But I know where he is at all times , even in dodgy places . I know he's there

And it's because he's communicating that with me , he always makes it a point to let me know about his day

And obviously he knows mine like that back
of his hand

I'm in Durban at school , after that I'm at
the palace . That's my everyday daily life

It's just gets lonely , because I miss him so
much . Like I want to feel his touch , and
those endless kisses

But it's the last month of my school year ,
so I just have to endure

Hopefully after exams I can get to see him ,
I don't know what he'll say about that

And my stay in the palace has been okay ,
it's not home so I doubt it'll ever feel like
that to me

I'm dealing with the truth of what Thato did
to my mother , and the fact that we buried
someone

While my mother's remains are in a river
somewhere

I'm dealing with the fact that she's not at
peace , and her spirit is hindered by that

It has started sinking in me , that I have no
home . I have no family . Basically I have no
one

And it kinda saddens me in a way , because
I have two sisters and a brother

But our father left my mother for their
mother , so obviously just like our fathers
family they want nothing to do with us

After learning that Thao is dead , I'm still
not at peace

He hurt me in the most worst and horrible
way ever , I doubt I'll ever be the same
Dikeledi growing up

But what remains is that , as much as he
hurt me he was my brother

And to me he was the only family I had , as
sick as it sounds

He's gone and I don't care to be honest , I
wish I could have answers

Like why ? Why kill our mother knowing
that she's all we had . And why take me in ,
only to break me the way he did

But he's gone now , and I feel like it was
unfair for him to die . Without me knowing
why he did what he did

I couldn't care less that he's dead , but I
wanted to look him in the eye

I cried , I begged him . I apologized to my rapist for raping me

And all he gets is death , without facing what he's done . The damage that he's caused

Now it haunts me everyday and night , I love Tyler with everything that I am

But I feel like I'm not being just to him , he doesn't deserve a broken woman like myself

How damaged am I in my private part , how do I strip naked in front Tyler and not get everything that happened to me back ?

How do I open my thighs for him ? And let him penetrate me ?

He doesn't deserve all of this , and I wish my heart understood it

I wish I loved him enough to let him be with another , someone that's better and not me

And that hits me

Voice : hi

I wipe my tears first , I'm sitting by the college gate . Left Qaphela in the car alone . I'm yet to go to class

I lift my eyes , and God sure creates . Not
taking anything from that creation Tyler
Zungu

I doubt I'll ever even look at any man how I
look at Tyler

Him : sorry to disturb your moment

Me : some moment it is

Him : I hear it's good and sometimes
needed

Me : I do it quite a lot , so I doubt it's
healthy when it's like this

Why am I telling him all this ? I don't even know him

Him : and it doesn't suit you

I nod , to avoid saying more . The only man I'm to be open to is Tyler no one else

Him : the name is Mnotho Ngonyama

Me : Ngonyama is supposed to be a surname ?

He smiles

Mnotho : not supposed to be , but it is

Me : right that's very strange

Mnotho : I think you're strange and weird

Me : thank you very much Ngonyama

I say getting up

Mnotho : can I walk with you ?

He must not , I shall not be tempted by him
no ways I refuse

Me : no I....

My phone rings and it can only be one person

Me : don't you wanna excuse yourself ?

Mnotho : uhm no

Me : it's my husband

He is blank as ever , I answer the call maybe he thinks I'm playing with him

Me : Manzini

Tyler : when am I marrying you again ?

I giggle

Tyler : fuck sweetheart I miss you

Me : I miss you too can you just come back home ? You know it's not healthy for a husband to stay far from his wife for too long

I want to die right now because I only said that for this guy to leave , but he's not going anywhere

Tyler : ucwalisela bani ? (Who are you flaunting to)

He wants to laugh but he's just holding it in,
and well I laugh

Me : no one

Tyler : you're bad at this , but your husband
will be home in a week okay

I hope he's not lying

Me : okay , I can't wait to see you

Tyler : remember I'm in love with you , and
those college boys better stay the fuck
away

This is no College boy , he's old maybe even older than Ty slightly . I hope Qaphela did not run his mouth , that's why I got called

Because I'll never do Tyler dirty like this

Me : okay and I'm in love with you

I let him drop the call

Mnotho : shall we go now ?

Me : and you're still here

Mnotho : in the flesh

Me : okay Ngonyama

He laughs again as we walk inside the gate

Mnotho : you should retract your statement

Me : what ?

Mnotho : that my surname is strange

Me : why would I do that ?

Mnotho : aren't you and your husband
strange ?

Me : no

Mnotho : most people say I love you , not
I'm in love with you

Me : find the one your heart beats for , and
we shall have this conversation again

And he still walks with me to the hall ,
imagine my shock when I get that he's a
teacher

Explains his mature face looking , but his
look is very much young

.

.

Tyler

The trips in and out of the country have taken their toll on me

And worse Khoza is right here not leaving , he's becoming a leech and I have a good mind to just step on him

I'm doing this not to attract eyes to the families . Some of these people are high in power , in government

And as their leader it's my job to protect them , hence I just can't kill Khoza

Everyone in his department will know it was me . And I'll have annoying useless cops behind my back

I don't need that , it'll create stares . And my reputation might take a knock in a way because of that

Doesn't matter how powerful or legit you look , on stain to your name

And they'll keep popping up , like flies everywhere

I hope to remain in the country for quite some time , and with exams to be done in a month

I hope to bring my wife to be here , so she can spend time with me

I don't know how she'll react to that , being with me alone

Because there's no one in the house just me, and as it seems Princess can't come with her

Because it seems like it'll be the time she goes to Botswana as soon as she's done with her exams as well

Being around will get Khoza off my back

Sambulo : look at that

I guess I spoke too soon , and the second he spots us he walks over to our table

Me : I think I need to have you reported

Khoza : Tyler Oceans

Me : it's Zungu to you

Khoza : doesn't matter , and I doubt it matters to you as well

Me : what do you want ?

He pulls a chair and sits down

Khoza : in a public space like this , with eyes everywhere . You won't kill me forget it

I lean on the table

Me : if I want you dead , I can kill you right here right now and no one will even know it was me

He moves his head back

Me : now tell me what do you want ?

He looks at us

Me : I don't have all day

Khoza : okay , I know all about you and the Mafia's . All the money you have in your offshore accounts . Every person you have killed like an animal and...

Me : let me stop you right there , I told you last time . That if you ever come at me again with this Mafia nonsense , you'll kiss this lousy job of yours goodbye

Khoza : I'm not fighting Zungu

Sambulo : aren't you just confused ?

Me : and he wants to fucking confuse us

Khoza : gentleman

We give him the attention he's requiring

Me : say what you want to say

Khoza : give me the Storm cartel and I leave
the Mafia's alone

Sambulo gives me an unsettled look

Me : what ?

Khoza : don't play fool with me....

Me : the fool is me ?

He swallows

Khoza : no

Me : thought as much , and that leaves it to
be you and just you

Khoza : right , but Zungu I know you know
about the Storm cartel

Me : says who ?

I am keeping one straight face ?

Me : see how much credit you give me ?
Khoza your obsession with me is driving you
insane . It was the Mafia's now it's some
cartel , what a lunatic you are

Khoza : we can do this all day

Me : unfortunately I don't have the time as
you do

We get up with Sambulo

Khoza : I'm making you a good deal here , give me the Storm cartel . And I leave the Mafia families alone .

Me : let's just say , I actually believe this rubbish of yours . About this cartel , what has suddenly interested you in the cartel over the so called Mafia's ?

Khoza : say whatever you want to say , but we both know the Mafia's are nothing compared to the cartel . Those guys are dangerous, they're one hell of a syndicate that's ruining this whole continent . Not being insulting to your Mafia men , but you know this truth .

He gets up

Khoza : and they're your biggest enemies
aren't they ?

I chuckle

Me : I'll see you around Khoza

Khoza : just think about this , and you know
where to find me

We leave going to our cars , and Sambulo is
not himself

Sambulo : the families are coming down in a few days

Me : I know that

Sambulo : what about Khoza ? he's like a dog with a bone

Me : leave Khoza to keep chasing , clearly he has no idea what he's talking about

I look back and the coast is clear

Me : how can I give myself up ?

One look to him and I get into my car
driving out

-
-
-

Princess

There's water everywhere , and the more I
keep trying to get out

I keep on sinking deeper and deeper , it's
been a while and I can't seem to go up

Me : help

I don't know who I'm expecting to help me ,
because I'm in deep water

I'm a bit scared , and I don't think water is
supposed or meant to make me feel scared.
The more I go deeper , and I start to cry .
It's not just a cry but it's a plea for help

I get creepy scared when I reach the found
and there's bones

Human bones like a skeleton , but the
creepy thing is that the heart is still
pumping

I scream , but it's useless . Just bubbles of water and nothing else

I try to move up but I can't , this is just creepy . How can a heart be a alive on a skeleton

I close my eyes hoping that maybe this isn't real , but when I open them again it's still here

Voice : peace

Says a voice one that sounds like my grandmother . I listen to the melody of it , and soon after I'm trying to calm myself down

Me : who are you ?

I open my eyes , and all I see is Ledi crying .
And her cry is piercing through my heart

This doesn't make sense , what connects
her to this skeleton ? And what's the deal
with the beating heart

I'm shaken very roughly, when I open my
eyes I'm in bed in my chamber

Wet as ever , and the sheets where I'm
sleeping

Ledi is on her feet , just looking at me

Ledi : are you okay ?

The second I hear her voice , and I look at her . I feel her pain right in my heart

It's not even emotion , but it's physical pain.
My own tears do the most

Now it makes sense , she's dead but the beating heart that hasn't given up is what's keeping her alive

Me : let me give you a hug

She doesn't even mind my wetness , she sit down on the bed and we hug

Me : I'm sorry

I feel like I've failed her as friend , she must have gone through the most

And the fact that she hasn't opened up to me , makes me feel like I haven't been a friend enough to her

Was this what my grandmother was talking about ? If so , how will I know what she needs healing from and how do I do it ?

Because I want her to be okay , I want to help her so bad . I need strength , I think there's a lot at play here . And maybe I'm not ready at all

But I want to be ready to help her

.

.

.

INSERT 17

Dikeledi

Princess worried me this morning ,but she seems to be fine now

Well I hope she's fine , because she's laughing and talking like her usual self

But there wasn't anything usual about what we woke up to

The bed and sheets all wet , and not forgetting herself as well . That was a bit creepy and scary

Prince : are you okay ?

They're back from school already , and I didn't have any class today

Me : I'm fine

Prince : can I join you ?

I nod , he pulls a chair and sits down

Prince : nice weather

Me : no ways like no , we're so not there

Prince

We laugh

Prince : what , I'm being polite and all you know trying to make conversation

Me : anything but weather talks

Prince : eish

Me : don't , what do you want ?

Prince : to sit and to apologize

Me : apologize ?

Prince : what I did , expressing my feelings like that . It was just a bruised ego , I've always wanted you . I was too slow about it, and boom my brother went for the goal he got you

Me : and it's no competition of who got the girl first

Prince : I see now it's not , I'm sorry I even put you in that kind of position

Me : it's okay , we are past that . Let it not happen again

He smiles

Prince : it won't

I hope he means it , cause I can't deal with brother's fighting over me

I don't need that drama , I'm sure the queen and king would kick me out

Imagine causing their sons to fight ? I would be so labelled , and I don't want that

Me : okay then

Prince : how is school ?

Me : crazy busy , but I can't complain

Prince : I'm glad to see you're doing good , ready for exams ?

Me : I don't know about being ready , but yeah it's happening

Prince : I'm here if you need help

We're the two that's doing sciences , the princess is doing economics

Me : I'll hold you to that

Prince : and I mean it , I want a car next year surely . And if I can help you pass , Tyler's arm will be twisted to buy me one

Me : wow

We laughs

Prince : it's nothing personal

Me : use me Prince yes use me

Prince : and it's not even like that

Voice : what's not like that ?

She hugs me from behind

Prince : nothing that you need to know
about

Princess : really ?

We say nothing

Princess : oh okay , well I've been looking
for you

Me : here I am

Princess : I see that

And she goes quite

Me : I thought you were looking for me

She laughs

Princess : yes , here I wanted to give you
this

She hands me a black card , with initials T.Z

Me : and then ?

Princess : it's Tyler's he gave it to me the time he wanted me to spoil you on my birthday , now that he's gone and didn't want it back I figured he wanted you to have it

It's the card he was talking about , but I never even got to ask it from Princess. Because I wasn't ever going to , I don't want them thinking I'm here for their brother's money

Me : I don't want it

Princess : it's your man's , and I don't want it as well

She says already leaving laughing

Me : do you want it ?

Prince : you want Tyler to kill me , hell no .
Keep it , and I have a feeling he told you to

Me : I don't like your feelings very much

He laughs

Prince : we all can see you love him laugh

relax no one is going to label you as a gold digger or whatever

That's a relief , and I hope everyone shares the same sentiments

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

The families have arrived , and I stayed away from them for the past two days . But now we have to meet , and we can do that with Khoza not here . But I know he has

men watching me , but as long as he has nothing concrete there's nothing he can do

Sambulo : when are you heading home ?

Me : tomorrow , I promised my heart . I can't disappoint her

He laughs , we walk inside . I won't stay home for long . I have to be back soon , maybe I'll stay for a few days only . I hope she'll understand

Abdul : you sure know how to keep a man waiting

Me : I see men in here , you're not that special calm down

I sit down

Leo : you take after your father through and through . He was one ...

Me : finish that and I'll have your brains splattered all over that wall

This idiot thinks he's all that

Leo : apologies

Me : get a hold of yourself in my presence ,
we're not there with each other

He nods , he's really old way over his time .
But no he still pokes his nose everywhere

Jones : what happened with the shipment ?

All eyes around the table come to me.

Me : I'd hate to think you're all thinking
otherwise about me right now

Abdul : the shipment came earlier than
anticipated

Jacob : that forced us to work under pressure

Leo : we couldn't let the organs go to waste

Me : are you going to sit here and tell me everything that I know ?

Abdul : we just need answers

Me : from me ?

It goes silent

Me : I thought as much , I don't work for you can you let that sink in your brains for

the sake of keeping these families the way they have been so far ?

Leo : we meant

Me : that did not require you to answer me back , let it sink

Rahul : take heart Oceans

Me : now the shipment came early , who's men messed up ? I don't care to know .
Because if it were my men , they would be dead by now

Leo : we don't just kill people , without a valid reason

I draw my gun out , by the time they all realise what's done . He has a bullet through his forehead

Blood all over that wall , his head tilted back

Abdul : what....

Me : keep quite

Sambulo : I suggest we all do that now

And it goes quite , like there's no one in
here

Except Leonardo's blood that's dripping to
the floor

My head is pounding like it'll blow , a few
deep breaths and I find myself again

I've just killed one of our own , and I don't
know what consequences this will hold

I can't take chances , I need my man power

Me : we do kill people without a reason ,
and he's just become one of those statistics.

Now do you need to know who's men
fucked up ? Because I'll gladly take care of
them

Jacob : no , I think we can all agree it's
enough blood for one day

Rahul : we can do better to avoid the same
situation happening again

Me : now can we get on with what we came
here for

I'm sure they're all itching to have their
guns aimed at me right now

Abdul : we need to establish more business, a lot of money stays offshore . And we can't access it because there's no means to clean it

I can money everywhere but not in my father's company . That's my siblings legacy, I don't want anything with crime associated with it

Me : then tell me what you want I'll make it happen

It's their fucking money and not mine

Rahul : clubs , those a big in this country

Jones : that could work

Me : I'll make it work

Jacob : maybe a few restaurants here and there

Me : I'm not so sure about that , but I'm not dissing it either

Rahul : and so can orphanages , and a few women and children centres

Me : the very same women you kidnap and make sex slaves

He shrugs his shoulders

Me : fine , and I think that's enough to clean
enough of your money . So you can have
access back to it

So many business , all to me might cause
eyes . Something I don't want

Unless , I register a few those into my men's
names . Not leaving my woman out , she'll
reap the real profits of the business nothing
that has to do with the dirty money or the
crime

.

.

Princess

That dream has been bothering me , I can't get it out of my mind

I have exams starting tomorrow , I need it out of my head

And I just remembered what my grandmother said . That I have answers right in front of me , and that's my mother

Me : my queen

She's in bed , I feel like she's soon to give
birth

Mom : come through

I walk inside , and sit down

Me : I am sorry to be a bother

Mom : you're anything but a bother , and
I'm in a slight pain

Me : is she coming ?

She smiles , and that melts my heart

Mom : I think today is the day

I laugh a bit not making noise for her

Me : I'm so excited

Mom : I know you are

Me : I'm tired being the only girl amongst
boys

Mom : your brothers won't like that , and
you'll be jealous when your sister starts

taking their time and affection away from
you

Okay , I didn't think of that . Babies are so
cute and you just can't help but adore them

Mom : worry not there's enough love going
around

Me : she'll be number one now , but it's
okay

Mom : what brings you by ? I know it's not
just to see me

Me : unfortunately not

Mom : then I'm listening

Me : a few days ago , I had a very disturbing dream . I was underwater and I kept drowning , I couldn't go up . When I touch the ground , there were remains of a human body . A skeleton , but the creepy thing about it , is that there was a heart . It was very much alive and pumping . I don't know what that meant , I think it's about Ledi . But I don't know how to approach it

Mom : it's her mother baby

Me : what ?

Mom : her mother is not buried , her remains remain at a river

Me : how is she not buried when they had a funeral for her ?

Mom : they buried someone that's not her

Me : what ?

This is shocking me now , how can this be ?

Mom : Ledi is aware of this , we had reading a while back

Me : okay but then she's still dead right ?

Mom : yes

Me : then the heart ?

Mom : she's still lurking around as a shadow following Ledi everywhere

I wanted to know but now that I know , I don't think I was ready

.

.

.

Tyler

That meeting messed up with me badly ,
and for me I can't even pop any pills

I'm anything but human , I live with a
fucking curse that I can't reverse nor do
anything about it

And right now I need some feed , I can't
keep still . I'm not functioning well

And that means I can't go home like this ,
no one knows about this at home

And they can't know , as much as they may
think they're cursed or something . I'm a
fucking monster , even they can't stand me

Sambulo : here

He hands me the small bottle with the liquid inside , and it's still fresh I can just tell by the colour

Me : really ?

Sambulo : take it

I take the bottle and down it

Sambulo : in no time you'll be fine

I hold my head grabbing my hair , you'll swear I'm pulling it

I feel the blood moving in my veins , and they pop out everywhere on my body

A few deep breaths , and I'm okay . I take one pull and the veins slowly disappear

Sambulo : fuck I can't stand you

Me : you're a vegetarian you don't appease me

Jase walks in

Jase : he's on the phone

I take the phone from him

Me : I need all the sleepers awake

Mnotho : how soon ?

Me : I have a journey to KZN today

Mnotho : give me two hours , don't go anywhere until two hours has passed

I drop the call and hand Jase his phone back

Jase : waking up sleepers ? Is this about Leonardo ?

Me : yes , I killed a member of the family in

front of them . As much as they looked fine,
I can't trust they'll let this down

Jase : the family can't go against the cartel

Me : that's why I'm bringing them close by ,
they keep me safe and the family keeps on
their toes to keep the cartel away

They both laugh

Sambulo : I can't believe these people are
such idiots , they're letting you lead them
while you're their worst enemy

Me : by the time they know , I'm all Storm cartel I'll be done with them

Jase : and the cartel always serves

He even motions with his hands

My guys are nowhere to caring about the Mafia families . Their loyalty lies with the Storm cartel , which is run by me . Which is what we are

But no one knows that besides my men

The Mafia's see the cartel as their enemies , police think I'm with the Mafia's

They both have no idea that I am the Storm
cartel

-
-
-

INSERT 18

Princess

Upon knowing what my mother has told
me, I don't even know how to feel at all .
And by all means I tried to avoid Ledi , but
it's almost bed time now

And I'll have to face her , I don't know how
to react now

My friend can't be okay , and I'm failing her.
I feel like I'm not doing anything for her
right now

And it's not because I don't want to , but I
just don't know how to

Prince : care to share ?

He pulls the chair in front of me and he sits down

Me : I'm just thinking

Prince : obviously

Me : and you don't need to know about what

Prince : come on , maybe I'll be able to help you

This is one sensitive matter , I don't think it's my place to tell anyone . Even if it's my brother

Me : yeka (leave it)

Prince : fine at least I tried

He gets up

Me : I'm sorry it'sit's just too personal
and not about myself

Prince : you should have just said so , aiii
kodwa abafazi (but women)

I laugh

Me : that's not nice aibo

Prince : I hope you'll be okay

If only my friend can be okay , then I know I'll be okay as well

Me : yeah I hope so too

Prince : I'm going to bed , I'll see you

Me : normal people say goodnight Prince

Prince : imagine if I'm not normal what does that say about you ?

My brother can be spiteful at times

Me : you....

Prince : keep quite

He leaves going out the kitchen door , the door opens and Tyler walks

And as always I'm happy to see my brother

Tyler : don't hug me

I'm already on my feet heading to him , he won't push me away never

Tyler : how are you ?

He hugs me a bit tighter

Me : I'm alright

Tyler : no you're lying

He pulls me back , and now for some reason
I'm even scared to look him in the eye

Tyler : talk to me

Instead of talking I just cry , and he hugs me

Tyler : where's mommy ?

At his age , but it doesn't get tiring . He's just one sweet mommy's boy

Me : in her room

Tyler : did you talk to her ?

I nod against his chest

Tyler : okay , then just do what you need to do . You'll be fine

I pull out

Me : she told you ?

Tyler : I don't even know why you're crying

Talk about having strange brothers

Me : okay

Just then dad walk in with mom , and seems like they're leaving

Tyler : and now ?

Mom : isn't this nice ? You're home and your sister is coming

Yes finally , I'm so excited for this . Even though she'll replace me but it's fine

Tyler : don't have anymore babies , I'm too old to be a brother again

We laugh

Me : can I come with ?

Mom : no baby , it's late you'll come tomorrow morning

Me : yes my queen

Tyler : I'll drive

It's not fair that he gets to leave with them , but he's Tyler who can say no to him ?

And he wasn't even asking , he just said I'll drive and it's a done deal

It's no use even complaining , I go to my chamber

And Ledi is already in bed , I change into my night wear as well . I'm lazy to shower tonight

I snuggle closer to her , she hates being touched and all . But she knows me

Me : your man is here

She goes quite

Me : I know you're not sleeping

She laughs

Ledi : and I want to sleep

Me : your man is here

Ledi : he's right , this is his home aker (right)

Me : ah , aren't you happy ?

I know she's happy

Ledi : sleep

Me : but.....

Ledi : I don't discuss Tyler with you , I just don't

Me : but we're friends

Ledi : and he's your brother it's awkward

This is not fair at all , I don't like this . We ought to have boyfriends gossip

Me : did you have to date my brother ?

Now we can't gossip about him

She laughs , and I guess she's not going to gossip

I struggle to sleep for a while , but sleep finally catches up . Only to be woken up by a persistent knock

I look at the time and it's close to midnight

Me : people are inside , don't they sleep

Ledi is just looking at me and I'm frustrated

Voice : Princess open this door

Not him

Me : he's your man go open

She gives me a bored look

Me : hamba (go)

She ignores me

Tyler : open the door wena (you)

I have said not fair three times tonight , I
get up and open the door

Tyler : what's your problem ?

Me : nothing

He walks to the bed and sits down next to his woman

Me : I want to sleep

Tyler : sweetheart

Blush girl blush

Tyler : let's go sleep

Me : are you for real ?

Tyler : I'm not talking to you

In my own chamber

Ledi : I'm sleeping

He pulls the blankets off her

Ledi : you lack peace

Does he care ? He takes her hand she gets
off the bed

Me : bye

She waves slightly

Me : I can't believe this

She giggles walking out holding her man's arm

.

.

.

Tyler

I was not going to go to sleep alone , while my woman is right in the same yard as me

I didn't even stay that long at the hospital , I dropped my parents . As soon as my mother was admitted I left

I wanted to be with this person of mine right here , and it's been a short night

Because now it's morning , we have to wake up and go to the hospital

She turns and faces me , and her legs is over mine . I love how she's slowly not minding my touch

Me : you're beautiful even when you wake up

She smiles , eyes still closed . I kiss her forehead , she caresses the side of my face

Me : you slept well ?

She nods

Me : you wanted me home , but you're not even looking at me

She opens her eyes

Me : look at you

She giggles

Ledi : someone is happy today

Me : I have you right here , all the reason
for me to be happy

Ledi : I'm happy you're home

Me : I know , but I won't stay long

Ledi : already ?

The sleepers are awake , any chance the
Mafia hears about them it's war

And I have to be near the cartel , so I can
protect my men at all cost

Me : Tuesday I leave

Ledi : okay

Me : sweetheart

Ledi : I understand , you have work and your life there so it's really fine

Who is she fooling ? Definitely not me

Me : I want you to come visit me when you're done with exams

The smile is back , I guess she also wanted to

Me : is that a yes ?

Ledi : I will visit you

Me : you're sneaky though

She laughs , and I hope to keep her laughing like this always

But the fear I have , will she withstand me the way I am ? And everything I come with ?

I'll be shattered if she were to say she can't be with me , but I don't want to lie to her .
As soon as she's done with her exams , I will tell her everything

Even what my family doesn't know

-
-
-

Dikeledi

I'm happy to see him I won't lie , but I'm also sad he's leaving this soon

But I appreciate that he came either way , this is still him comprising for me

Because if it was someone else they
wouldn't have bothered coming

A village girlfriend , really doesn't matter
much to a city man . But he's here

We're all at the hospital to see his mother ,
I wanted to stay outside . But the king said I
can come in , the birth of a child is
something very sacred

I'm not a believer or anything like that , but
my mother left me with some hard lessons.
Not everyone and anyone who is not family
is allowed to see a new born . But this is the
royal family , I guess they have some
precautions

Princess : she's so cute , whole mini me

Prince : don't lie she looks like bafo (big brother)

And she does , she's like Tyler . The eyes the mouth and the nose . Even the skin complexion

Tyler : at least you're not jealous

Princess : don't encourage him , she looks like me . You're a man

Tyler : one hella handsome man

Princess : but....

King Africa : this is my child , she looks like me . End of story

And who does he look like ? This family is cute , makes me wish I had my own family but yeah such is life

Princess : but my king Tyler looks like you

They laugh , poor Princess . I understand why she wishes the baby looked like her

They're the only girls , and of course she's the big sister

Prince : and that answers you

She sulks but the truth lies in front of her eyes

Mom : don't you want to go get us food ?

She just throws the question , it's not directed to anyone

King Africa : twins let's go

Princess wants to protest , but one thing I've seen is the respect they hold for their parents

They don't ever talk back nor go against them , and it's not fear no . It's the respect , and knowing your place as a child

They leave with the king , Tyler takes his lookalike

Tyler : aren't you just cute

Why is he speaking English to a few hours baby ? He's weird

He walks to where I'm seated , and sits next to me

Tyler : I'm going to give you beautiful babies

I frown , this is just so wrong on so many levels . This is his sister

He shouldn't even be thinking about having babies with me

I don't even know how are we going to get over the part of being intimate

Tyler : she's cute you can't deny

Me : I can never take anything from your looks

Tyler : hold her , look how she's looking at you . I think she likes you

Isn't he using the cutest method to earn some crazy points

Me : I've never held a baby before

Tyler : let me help you

He helps me , and I get so lost and caught up in the moment holding the baby

That we even forget the queen is in here , we're so focused on the baby . Until she clears her throat and we look at her

Queen Royalty : I did say I'm not ready to be a grandmother yet

Yhoh !

Tyler : what makes you....

Queen Royalty : do you two have baby fever

Me : no....

I bite my tongue

Queen Royalty : good you have to finish school , get a job get married be set in life then make a baby

The wisdom this woman spits , if you're not paying attention you'll think it's just words

She's just being a mother but no , she's way too deep

Tyler : isn't that a lot of things to do first ?

Royalty : babies are the last things in anyone's life . As much as they're blessings and we can't help but love them . They come with a whole lot of responsibilities , it takes money to raise one . It's a full time job just to be a parent . And I don't want Ledi depending on you for anything , until she's established herself in life no babies . If you dare get her pregnant Tyler I swear I'll cut your dick off

No !

I don't know whether to laugh or what. But that doesn't sound like something that can come out of the queens mouth

I'm scared of his dick no lies , I'm not even ready to see it . But I don't want it cut off either

Please lord forgive me

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 19

Princess

We're about to leave the hospital , I so wish I can stay here because I don't want to leave the baby . But in a few days they'll be home , I won't see her all the time because of school and exams . But at least she'll be home , I'll get to peek in time to time

Prince : what's her name ?

Me : can she have a Zulu or Tswana name ?

Tyler : why ?

Me : we all have English , like from the parents to the kids

It's actually crazy when you think about it

Prince : so she's an outcast with a Zulu name ?

Me : I think unique is what you're looking for , like the name Asante . Too had aunty already took it

Mom : and I'm not renaming my child after anyone , not even if it's Asante

We laugh

Mom : and she already has a name

Me : what's her name ?

Mom : Azania

Me : there's just something with you people
and Africa right ? I don't mean you my king

Everyone laughs , and now I wish I didn't
say that

Mom : there's a reason why

Of course there can never not be a reason .
But nonetheless it's a beautiful name

.

.

.

Sambulo

You ignore one court order , and a warrant of arrest is out . I really don't get what's this woman problem , I don't want her and I don't want her child . I'll never change how I feel about that , women have this thing to

feel entitled . To do as they please and want, a man's word is never cared for

I'm not one to be taken for a ride , she's failing to raise her child alone and she's bothering me with it

I'll help both of them , so they can leave me in peace . I won't even send anyone to do it, I'll do so myself

Jase : are you sure about this ?

And the mental case is asking me

Me : what does it look like ?

He insisted on coming with , and I didn't even want him to

Jase : what if you later on feel bad ?

I won't , I open the door and what do you know . They're both passed out on the couch

I shake her roughly causing the baby to wake up as well

Lizzy : Sambulo , what are you doing here ?

Me : how many times have I told you to leave me alone ?

Lizzy : what ?

Me : this is not my child , but you have court orders chasing after me . And now there's a warrant of arrest . You're really forcing me to take care of your thing

Lizzy : but.....

Me : I told you I don't want kids , you went ahead and got yourself pregnant with my sperm . You wanted the baby , now you're forcing it down my throat . Why are you not raising it all the same way you made it alone ?

Lizzy : please....don't fight

Me : are you not fighting , chasing me with court orders ?

Lizzy : I'll stop , I swear Sambulo I'll stop

Jase : how about you just leave and never come back ?

No ways , so later on when this kid of hers is older will come after me

Lizzy : yes , yes I will

Me : don't worry I'll help you both , this way you'll never come back

I draw my gun out , she screams crying causing the baby to cry as well

Jase : I will never see heaven because of this

I shoot the baby first

Jase : what the fuck ?

Lizzy screams holding the dead baby , and I help her to shut up with a bullet to her skull as well

Me : are you gonna help me clean this up ?

Jase : it didn't help knowing lunatics

Me : takes on to know one

I'll go burry them somewhere they'll never
be found , I'll clear this house and make it
seem like they left

She asked for this , I never gave her any
baby . But she just had to bother me with
her child

.

.

.

Tyler

I'm on call with Jase , he's telling me of what Sambulo did

I'm not shocked nor surprised , it was only a matter of time before he snapped . And all it took was a warrant of arrest to get him to snap

He sure took his sweet time , if it was me they both would have been dead the day they came to me

I don't play like that , you screw me over you fucking pay of it . I'm not one of those criminals who are like , we do anything and everything but we don't hurt women

If a woman is full of shit , there's no exception with me

Jase : we got rid of everything

Me : why are you bothered ?

I hear it all in his voice

Jase : he was a child

Me : you don't grow a conscience when you're a man like us Jase

Jase : I know and she pushed too far

Me : exactly , too bad the baby got the end of it as well

The door opens my own baby walks in

Me : let's talk later

Jase : alright

I drop the call

Ledi : did I disturb ?

Me : no , come here

She walks to me , I bring her down she sits
on top of me

Me : are you okay ?

She nods

Me : you know you can talk to me right ?

Ledi : I'm scared

Me : of what ?

Ledi : of you leaving me

Okay this is serious , I noticed something wasn't okay with her . But I just thought it's nothing serious

Me : why would you even think I'll leave you ?

Ledi : you're a man , you have feelings and needs . And I'm scared to explore that part with you , I know you can be patient so much . There will come a time you'll get tired , and when that happens I stand to lose you

Me : don't be pulled into that mentality , he's a man that's why he cheated because he was deprived sex . This is a two way

thing , it pleases both partners not just one .
And sex don't favour only the men , it's
favours women too . You're not ready and
that's fine , and I'm not expecting you to be
ready . I'm willing to wait , because you're
that important to me . I don't want to rush
you , nor make you feel obligated to do this
just for my sake . You need to want it as
well , and now it's just too soon for you .
And with everything you've been through ,
you might not even want to have sex ever

Ledi : and that's me loosing you , isn't it ?

Me : I'm not even thinking about that ,
there are many ways and things you can
loose me for and about . But sex is not one
of them , yes it's important and needed .

But it's not the foundation of this relationship

Ledi : can we try ?

Me : yes we can try , when you come over to Cape town . Right now I don't want you being distracted by this , you have exams . Trying to have sex might just trigger things , I don't want you loosing focus

Isn't she the affectionate one all of a sudden , planting soft forehead kisses on me

Me : I'm in love with you

Ledi : I'm in love with you

I won't lose such a woman over sex , that's found everywhere . Right now I haven't gotten that far

Because I believe she needs to be given time to heal , and to deal with what happened to herself

If I rush to have sex , I'll trigger those events. And she'll never be comfortable to have sex with me

She'll just do it only because she wants to please me and doesn't want to lose me

And that's not how it's supposed to be

.

.

.

Prince

Words cannot fool anyone , right now they
haven't fooled me and surely with time
they won't fool anyone

With Tyler home , I want to stay away from
Ledi

It's too soon , it's still early . Seeing them together leaves some kind of a sting

I'm out with my friends , I'll rather be out here getting drink than being at home and seeing those two

Zamo : I'm surprised that you're still alive

Me : you intended to have me dead ?

He laughs , we walk outside away from the others inside

Zamo : thought your father will kill you , you know

Me : kill me for what ?

Zamo : dude you're in your final year , and
you go impregnate

I choke on the beer , I even spit it out

Zamo : what the hell !

Me : what did you say ?

He looks at me confused

Me : who did I impregnate ?

Zamo : oh come on that , everyone knows that Soso is pregnant

Me : hell no !

What's wrong with that girl ? And it won't be easy to deny all this

We never used protection , you tell her to prevent she says pills and injections don't treat her right

You tell her to get the morning after pill , clearly she never did if she pregnant now

Zamo : fuck you didn't know

Me : this can't be happening man , like not now

Zamo : is there a possibility that it can not be yours ?

Me : no

With that one I'm certain , it's my baby .
And she'll have to abort it . My father will have me raw , there's no way I'm going to be a father right now

I take my phone and call her , she doesn't answer . Quite a few times I call and still the same thing

Me : fuck

Zamo : hey relax man you'll pop a vein

This explains this crazy behaviour of hers ,
the mood swings

Always looking for arguments even when
there's no need for one

Soso dealt me this time around , I have to
see her tomorrow . We need to talk about
this

.

.

.

INSERT 20

Princess

I woke up very early today , heading out to the river right at the village . It's quite far from the palace , but I wanted some space

I could have just gone to the hut , I just thought the river would be much better

And luckily for me Ledi is sleeping with Tyler in his chamber since he's been home

I got to just leave and not be questioned

I've been at the river for a while now , I don't know what to say I don't know how to do this

And I can't get my mind out of which water does her mother's remains lie. This is KZN , there's many dams and rivers , one can never be sure

And they didn't live here , she only came
after her mother passed on

So I doubt it can be here , and surely I
would have felt it . I'm supposed to be one
with this water right ?

I take my shoes off , and slowly walk
towards the water

It's still dark so it's cold a bit , but I hope
this works for my sake

I walk inside the water , the deep I keep
going forward the more my body is sinking

Me : I hope I know what I'm doing

And I go under fully

.

.

.

Tyler

My mother is coming home today , and I offered to go fetch her over at the hospital. It's still quite early , my woman wants to go have her hair done

I've never seen such a low maintenance woman , I think all men deserve such

As much as a man's money is to be spent and all , it's nice when he initiates it

Not when the woman demands and feels entitled to it

My phone rings and it's Mnotho , I'm ought to see him before I leave . As much as he's an asset being this side , I need him back in Cape Town for a few weeks

They eye I'm receiving from this woman of mine , probably because I'm not answering the call

Me : yeah

Mnotho : what's hard answering a phone?

Me : boy I'm not your friend

He chuckles

Mnotho: I can see you today

Me : let me get back to you about that

I drop the call

Me : can we leave ?

Ledi : don't you have somewhere to be ?

Me : aibo ! You're listening to my phone conversations now

She just looks at me , I smile and bring her closer . Plant kisses all over her face , she ends up giggling

Me : shall we go ?

She nods , I take her hand and my car keys we leave

Ledi : we'll eat right ?

I chuckle

Me : yeah we'll eat

Ledi : don't laugh I'm hungry

Me : I think you just love food , but it's okay

I open the door for her , driving out there's
people outside the gate

About three men and two older women ,
and someone that's covered in a blanket

Me : what the hell ?

Ledi : tell me that's not for you Ty , I'll die
right here right now

Me : what's that ?

Ledi : you don't know ?

Me : woman come on , I'm so confused
right now

Me : whoever that's covered there is
pregnant , so that a wild guess and run with
it

Shit

Me : hey , I did not get anyone pregnant

Ledi : I did not accuse you either but ey

This is frustrating , not because of what she's saying but even for the possibility for her to even think I can have a pregnancy out there

And I understand , I have been a whore alright . But there's something

Me : it's definitely not mine

Ledi : okay you're sure it's fine

Me : because I'm infertile yes , I'm sure
sweetheart

I walk out the car , not even wanting to see
her reaction

Now I don't know how I'll be able to face
her , I've just told her how I'm not man
enough

She might just break up with me for this ,
never mind telling her my deeds and the
fucking creature of a monster I am

Me : molweni , can I help you ? (Good
morning)

I'm trying to be subtle right now , but my mind is on what just happened in the car

Old man : my prince , we have come here to lay a damage that has been done to our garden

Me : what ?

These village people and village language , this shit doesn't work

Guard : they've brought a pregnancy my prince

So this is how it's done ?

Me : I see , well the king is not here nor is the queen .

Old man : we don't mind waiting

Me : alright then be my guest

I look at the guard

Me : let them in

He nods leading them inside , I take a deep breath and walk back to the car

Me : I can't take you to gateway anymore

I say looking anywhere just not at her , I call Qaphela over . She gets out of the car , as he walks over to us

Ledi : what's going on ?

Me : Q , I need you to take her to gateway . I have to rush to the hospital

Ledi : then why am I not going to gateway

Me : you said you want to do your hair

Ledi : I do , but I'm not going anywhere without you

She's so adamant , and this was my way
also to avoid her for a few hours

So she can digest what I said to her , I won't
lie and say I'm not fearful through

We still need to talk about this obviously
now that it's out there

Me : sweetheart please not now , Q...

Ledi : Qaphela excuse us

What a shock ! And this idiot leaves , yet I'm
the one paying his bills and not her

My good men women are powerful , and she's so tiny for this right now

Ledi : what are you doing ?

I'm getting a slice of how marriage arguments are going to feel like

Me : I'm doing what ?

Ledi : I'm not going anywhere without you , if you have to go fetch your parents that's fine . Qaphela is not taking me anywhere , ha ke batle (I don't want to)

Okay , let's not speak our languages now

Me : okay I'm sorry , I thought you'll want to go get your hair done still

Ledi : not without you

And I watch her walk away from me , heading back inside

It's just fucking cute , she'll rather walk back . Because now she's angry at me

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Tyler is dramatic for a man , the plan was for us to spend the day together

Not with my driver that I'm always with everyday

He walks in , I just look at him and continue with what I'm doing

Tyler : sweetheart I'm sorry

Me : shouldn't you be on your way to fetch your parents ?

Tyler : I'll get to that , but I'm sorry

I love Tyler , whether he can have babies or not . Do I want to be a mother one day ?
Definitely yes

But that's still far , I haven't even gotten how I'll get naked in front of this man

Never mind him penetrating me , babies are the least of my worries right now

Tyler : I...

Me : you don't owe me no explanations

Tyler : sweetheart I'm sorry

Oh okay

Me : it's okay , I forgive you . For what I don't know

Because he did nothing wrong to be honest , except trying to switch up for Qaphela

Tyler : I'm in love with you

Me : and I'm in love with you

He turns to walk out

Me : come give me a kiss

He chuckles , and how I long to hear him
laugh

He walks right back in , I want to say it's
okay . I don't see you any less . It doesn't
matter , but unlike him I'm no straight
talker like that

He leans down , and today I don't even
hesitate to kiss him . I hope this is me
healing for the better

After a few minutes , I pull out he has to go
now

Tyler : go eat , I'll see you when I get back

Me : okay

He leaves and I'm not going anywhere near that house

I hope when he comes back he'll be okay , then maybe we can talk

This is the man who's loving a broken me , how selfish would it be for me to see him anyhow now . And I'm not doing him any favour , I love him as he is

.

.

.

Prince

A disaster as I walk into the lounge quarter ,
and Soso's family is here

All I uttered was a greeting and I walked out

What is wrong with these people ? Did they
have to come here this early ? And worse
I've been calling Soso , she wasn't
answering her phone

And now it makes sense why , because this
is the nonsense they've been cooking with
her family

I'm scared of what my father is going to say,
but I'm even more fearful of what Tyler is
going to do

Did he have to be home when all of this is happening ?

And how let them in ? Because I haven't seen anyone in this house . Even Princess is not here , there's no way that they just walked in here

They were let in but by who ? If only it was me who saw them

I take my phone and call Zamo , and worse I have one banging headache from getting drunk

Zamo : yeah how's...

Me : not so much noise

He laughs , I remove the phone from my ear
until he's done

Zamo : sorry , what's up ?

Me : Soso is here with her family , can you
fucking believe that ?

Zamo : no ways

Me : man I'm dead

Zamo : what are you going to do ?

Me : can I deny it ?

He laughs , and I'm serious here

Zamo : you're kidding

Me : it's a plan

Zamo : you want to put her through that ?

Me : I don't know , but if she answered my calls we wouldn't be here now

Zamo : I feel for you man

Me : and you're not helping

Zamo : because I don't know about your decision

Me : what other choice do I have ? Because agreeing is not an option

Zamo : have two beers you'll think this through

He's out of his mind , I won't drink with my parents coming home

Me : let's talk later

Zamo : alright , don't run away

That's an option as well

.

.

.

INSERT 21

Tyler

How do I break this to them ? I haven't even uttered a single word

And we've already arrived back home , I just watch them my father helping my mother off the car and the baby

This not how they're supposed to be welcomed back

And obviously this is all because of that boy Prince , I know I did not leave my sperms in anyone's pussy

It's a relief when they go to their chamber , but I can't keep quite now can I ?

I get off my car and head to their chamber ,
my mother is still settling in

Dad : did you have to follow us ?

Me : my king , you have visitors

Dad : I don't want to see anyone Tyler see
to it

Me : except they're not just anyone

Dad : I said....

Mom : who are they ?

Me : they brought a pregnancy

Mom : Tyler !

Why is she getting angry at me ?

Dad : don't you know of condoms ?

Mom : never mind condoms , why is he still busy with other women out there when he has Ledi ?

Me : it's not mine

Their faces are just priceless right now

Me : I'm not the only son who can produce sperms here

Mom : enough

She looks at her husband

Mom : your son wants me dead , go deal with this Africa

Dad : where is he ?

The power women hold

Me : I haven't seen him

Dad : let's go

We walk out the door

Mom : Tyler don't kill my child

She shouts and I'll pretend like I didn't hear that

This boy is only 18 and already he's ploughing his seed on village girls , what kind of nonsense is this ?

We walk inside , and it's pleasing to see that they've been served because surely there been waiting for a while

We greet and sit down , the girl or whoever is still covered even now . She must be dying under that blanket

Dad : apologies that I wasn't here when you arrived , and you had to wait . But I hear this is an important matter , hence my son here couldn't stand in my place

Old man : my king we understand , we appreciate you seeing us

Dad : of course , now can I here what brought you here

Old man : were from the Dandala family , right near the outskirts my king

Worse they're even part of this Kingdom

Old man : size lapha ekhaya lakho , silethe isisu (we have come to your home , about a pregnancy)

Dad : and who is my son that's responsible

Old man : the younger prince my king

My father looks at me and I'm already boiling , I don't care what's what

He shouldn't have gone and done this shit to begin with . I get up and go to his chamber , he's on the bed knees high up

Me : come here

One look at me and he's on his feet , he follows me out

Walking inside , he already has his head bowed down . He greets and we sit down

Dad : Prince

Prince : my king

Dad : this is the Dandala family , and they've come her to lay claim of you impregnating their daughter . What do you have to say for yourself ?

Prince : I did not impregnate anyone

This boy is full of shit , he knows it and I know it . He's shocking the poor family now

Dad : are you sure ?

Prince : I'm very sure

Me : can we see the girl

The other woman pulls the blanket off of her , she has her head bowed down

Me : look at me

I'm not her boyfriend , even my girlfriend looks at me when I talk to her

She lifts her head and looks at me , and Prince is done for

Me : we will pay damages and do everything required of us

Now I'm the one who shocks everyone

Prince : but....

Me : boy shut up before I fuck you up right here right now

I'm teaching this boy a hard lesson , he shouldn't lied to elders with a straight face like that . I've lied , but I was fucking better than he was

Prince : I don't

Me : while I'm still on that he will marry her

I say getting up , and they nerve for him to follow me back . I slap him so hard he falls back making contact with the wall . Causing him to bite his lip he bleeds

Dad : Tyler

He roars at me

Me : it's done it's settled , unless you want to have your own flesh and blood raised like a fucking commoner

I walk out , I want to leave right now . But I want to see my woman first

I walk into my chamber , and she's sleeping.
I kiss her forehead . And take my wrist band, I leave it right next to her

.

.

.

Prince

Tyler could have fucked me up but not this way , for me to marry Soso . No ways I did not want to marry that girl , and I don't want to even now

Me : baba (dad)

The family has left , after my father set a date to go there to do right as he put it

Dad : what is it Prince

He's beyond disappointed , and Tyler is furious it even got me a slap that left me bleeding . I don't even want to know how my mother is going to feel about all this

Me : I know I disappointed you , but it was a mistake

Dad : a mistake Prince really ?

Me : I didn't want this

Dad : yet you were to happy to sleep with her without a condom ?

Shit

Dad : boy at 18 I should have sex talks with you ?

Okay hell no

Me : no baba (dad)

Dad : don't you know what happens when your dick goes into a woman's pussy , without a condom ?

I'm fucked up

Me : I....I know

Dad : don't stutter when you talk to me boy

Me : I know baba (dad)

Dad : then what mistake are you talking about ?

Is it really a mistake ?

Me : I'm sorry

Dad : so son of mine is a weakling , and you showed me that you're one in there .

Rejecting the pregnancy , right in my face .

What imagine are you giving me to my people

Yeah I fucked up there , no one fools my father

Me : I get I messed up , but wasn't Tyler a bit harsh on me ?

He just looks at me

Me : I don't want to marry Soso

Dad : then you shouldn't have left your sperms inside of her

He walks out , Tyler dealt me . And even if my mother disapproves , his word won't be taken back . So it's done , I fucking have to marry this girl . How am I going to live with her ?

I take my phone and call her , my cheek hurts like shit . It rings for a while before she answers

Me : wena.....(you)

Soso : I'm sorry Prince , my mother found the test I had no way to lie or....

And she breaks down crying , like no body's business . I even feel bad a bit , but she should have told me

We would have made a plan , not this shit . I drop the call

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I woke up and I was alone in bed , I stayed for hours and hours . Until I fell asleep again. And there was no Tyler , I wake up this morning and here he is right next to me

I push the blankets off me , his upper body gets exposed a bit . He's wearing a white t-shirt . I can't miss the stains of blood on it , and I wake him up . And in seconds he's all up , like he wasn't even sleeping to begin with

Tyler : sweetheart

Me : what's this ?

I wish I had the t-shirt in my hand so he can see it clearly

Tyler : did you sleep well ?

Me : I asked you a question

Tyler : I'm sorry I left like that , I needed to clear my head . But I came to see you before leaving , you were sleeping

Me : Tyler

Tyler : okay mother , it's Prince's blood

Me : what , is he okay ?

I can't react anyhow , before he gets any crazy ideas . But he's his brother so of course I'm concerned

Tyler : he's fine , I'm the one who slapped him

He says taking his shirt off , and what a temptation lies before my hands

Tyler : we're not having sex , but come here

I laugh getting on top of him my hands lay on his chest . He holds my waist and brings me down

We kiss for a bit

Me : why did you slap him ?

Tyler : he got a girl pregnant

That's a relief that it's not Tyler , I was going to die

Me : but that's no reason to slap him , surely you know he has sex

Tyler : why is he even having sex ? I'm not having sex

I laugh

Me : shut up

He chuckles

Tyler : that idiotic boy denied the whole thing right in front of my father , and I know he was lying

Me : did he end up agreeing ?

Tyler : no , but I told them we'll do right

Me : meaning you accept ?

Tyler : he's going to marry that girl

Me : what !

Okay I'm talking alone

Me : did he say that ?

Tyler : I said that

This guy

Me : and is he okay with that ?

Tyler : no 18 year old is going to say shit to me , whether he's going with it or not he will do it .

Me : but that's not fair , it's not like you've never lied before

Tyler : I lie better than he did , that's why I'm punishing him for it

Me : but this was harsh

Tyler : who's supposed to make an honest woman out of that girl he's impregnated ?

Me : but this is not fair , he's only 18 what does he know about marriage ?

Tyler : what does he know about being a father ?

Me : it's not the same

Tyler : he will learn

I feel for him , having a brother like Tyler
can't be exciting at all

.

.

.

Tyler

I was harsh yes , and I don't even regret it .
If that boy has my blood running through
his veins

He will cook up a solution and get out of this shit . That's if he's even half of what me and my father are , if not then he'll be stuck in a marriage he does not want

I'm glad Ledi didn't pester me further about the blood . Because it wasn't Prince's blood, he didn't even stain me one bit

I was so out of it when I got to the storage , and there was no one there . I must have spilled the blood there , and wasn't aware it got to me . Because even coming back here, I had to make sure no one saw me . I walk in the kitchen , and there's no one . Now it clicks in my mind I haven't seen Princess since yesterday

I really hope she's not dating , she's to be queen in a few weeks she can't be doing those things

It's not even about age or to say she's my sister , she just can't be fooling around with boys . And I hope that's not the case wherever she is

Voice : how can you sell your own brother like that ?

So he went and ran cried to mommy

Me : why are you not in bed ?

Mom : you understand you're the child here right ? Not me

Me : yeah

She takes the glass of water from me and downs it

Me : he will be fine

Mom : Tyler , Prince is nothing like you and your father

Me : I know that , and he needs a hard wake up call

She shakes her head

Me : he's a Manzini , he needs to man up .
How will he be king when he's a weakling
like this?

Mom : you can be king and rule with your
iron fist like your father

Me : I don't want this throne , it's his . He
needs to act the part

As much as she doesn't approve she knows
that boy is weak , and he needs to man up .
If only I wasn't leaving tomorrow , I would
be taking him up the mountain

So he can unleash himself within

-
-
-

INSERT 22

Dikeledi

I didn't want to wake up today , and I so wished that today didn't come at all

I don't want Tyler to leave , but I can't tie him down right ?

I have three weeks before I see him again , and that pains me . Heavy chest pains

Tyler : join me for a shower

See he's coming in , from jogging . He doesn't even greet nothing , and he's talking about showering

Me : ake batle (I don't want)

Tyler : sweetheart I love you right

Me : and I love you

Tyler : don't talk your language ingathi
uyangithuka (it's like you're swearing at me)

He's lying

Me : you know I can't speak Zulu

I really can't , and I don't even wish to

Tyler : let's stick to one language that serves
us both best sweetheart

I nod , I'm really feeling down

Me : don't go

He holds his hand out , I just look at it

Tyler : sweetheart I need you to come scrub my back

Me : you're really leaving ?

Tyler : in three weeks you'll come see me

Me : why did you go jogging knowing you're leaving ?

Why am I acting crazy ? It's not funny nor cute

Tyler : we're doing this ?

Me : yeah

Tyler : I wanted to just get a breather

Me : from me ?

Of course not , poor man he sighs

Tyler : is this a stunt to get me not to leave?

I shake my head no

Tyler : good because it's not working , now

that shower

Argh

Me : okay

Tyler : let's go

Me : I'll come now

We've been dating for a while now , and I still haven't seen him naked

I don't know if I'm there yet , to see him like that and me comfortable with it

But I had no problem seeing him half naked,
so I guess it won't be that bad

Tyler : don't overthink it , it's just a shower .
I told you we'll try being intimate when you
come

I nod

Tyler : come don't keep me waiting

Me : this is not the movies

He shakes his head going to the bathroom ,
he turns at the door and looks at me

Tyler : you know you can't shower with clothes right ?

Me : what do you take me for ?

He disappears in the bathroom , I take a few minutes to myself before following him

I get undressed right at the door , he didn't even close the shower door it's wide open

And he's just standing there like the creature he is , with water running down his body . The awkwardness I had in my mind that I'd have , when I see him naked

More especially a man's ass , don't give me that look . I have a weird imagination and well that's fine

Tyler : don't just stand there , you're too heavy

Oh he's one of those ? The kind that says people are heavy if they're standing behind them

I walk inside , and the second I'm in he turns and faces me

We lock eyes for a few seconds , and he takes my lips into his . Cupping my face with both his hands

I get so lost in the kiss , we've kissed before
but nothing like this

I'm getting his vulnerability right now , he's
too exposed and not hiding anything

And what scares me is the fear that comes
and goes , I can't help and ask myself will I
loose him ?

Tyler : focus , this is just a shower

I open my eyes and he's long pulled out of
the kiss , he's just looking at me right now

Me : I love you

And I really mean it , my mouth is not just uttering those words . But my heart feels them

Me : if it's the universes way to say we shouldn't have kids then it's fine , I don't care about that . Kids are not everything

Tyler : you're 18 , you have your whole life ahead of you . You're still going , and your choices may change as time goes on . I don't want to lie and say when it comes that time , and you have changed and you then want to have kids that I'll let you because I won't

Me : good because I don't want you to

Tyler : I'm going to be so fucking selfish , no other man will ever get to have you while I watch and loose you

I don't see myself getting this close ever to another man , and I hope I never have to

Me : you won't ever have to

Tyler : I can't have kids , and I can never have kids . Not even with a miracle I can't

Me : it's okay

Tyler : this is the life you'll settle for , for the rest of your life

I nod , because with him I'm willing to

Tyler : there won't ever be let's do this ,
let's try this . I don't even want to adopt , I
will never raise nor love another person's
child

This man is too deep , and there's more to
what Tyler is saying . There's something too
deep behind all this

Me : it's understood and that's fine

He holds my waist , his manhood touches
the lower part of my stomach . And I don't
have what I thought I'd have , the fear the
panic

I'm just myself , I can't say normal self .
Because I don't feel very much normal right
now

I have all these sorts of crazy feelings
everywhere in my body

Tyler : just a shower

He brings me back from my focus , which
was on his dick

He hands me the sponge , and turns his
back faces me . My eyes trail to that fine ass
again

Tyler : it's sexy I know , now stop and scrub me

I smile so shyly , I couldn't even hide the lust . Something is very much wrong with myself

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

The fear she has is absolutely nothing , but maybe these things are different

Seeing me naked , won't be the same as
when we now have to be intimate

But the shower went well , even better than
how I anticipated it to go like

She's done packing my bag , and she's really
sulking . But as soon as I'm gone she'll get
over it

Not that she won't miss me , I know she will
as much as I will be missing her

But she'll shift all that focus to her books ,
and into that in three weeks we'll see each
other again

I'm glad that infertility talk is done , well I hope it's done

The truth in all this is that , I can't have kids with a mundane . My sperms are very much fertile . I just prefer to say I'm infertile because I'm avoiding to answer questions , that will leave her shocked

But it won't be long and she will know the whole truth , I plan to tell her when comes to me

The reason why I won't even bother getting her pregnant is that , I'm no human not even half of it

Don't let the appearance fool you , all this is just a cover and nothing else . If she were to carry any seed of mine , she wouldn't survive it .

These fucking creatures would kill her the second they're a few months . She wouldn't survive carrying a product of mine , it might be a baby and look like one

But it'd really be nothing but a blood feasting monster . One that would suck on her blood to keep alive

Until there nothing left of her , she'll die but it'll live . And I don't see how I'll love a thing that took her from me

I'll rather be safe than sorry , so she'll never
and I mean never carry a seed of mine

A knock at the door destruct me , and she
doesn't even look like she's up to open it

Me : really sweetheart ?

Ledi : what if it's your mother ?

Okay , I get up from the couch . She's on the
bed . I open the door and it's the
disappearing Princess

Me : prodigal daughter

Her energy is somewhat and I can't stand it,
she's too pure and clean

I'm evil the two can never co exist , but I
won't lose myself in front of any of them

I pretend like all is well

Princess : can I please borrow her

Me : why ?

Princess : it's important , it's about her
mother

Okay , that's important

Me : must it be now ?

Princess : yes

Me : but she has to take me to the airport

Princess : I'll try to be quick

Me : promise and don't break it

Princess : she always takes you to the
airport

Me : exactly

She sighs

Princess : okay I'll be quick I promise

I turn back and look at her , she's heard obviously

Ledi : what must I wear ?

Princess : decent please and cover up your head , and don't expose arms

Me : that's a lot

Princess : please

And she ignores me , Ledi gets dressed
decent as asked

Me : where have you been ?

Princess : seeking answers on how to help
her

Me : right

Ledi : I'm done

Me : you're one hella wife material , and I'll
make you a wife soon

She smiles , walking out

Me : bring her back

Princess : I will

They leave , and I guess I can take this time
to go see Mnotho fast

.

.

.

Princess

All this time being underwater , I didn't
think I'd come back alive

But I finally got what I wanted and what I was looking for

The sad thing was knowing the whole truth about everything that happened . People are cruel I know , but not to this extent

You know it's really true when they say "igazi lomuntu liyakhala" (a persons blood avenges)

Ledi : the river really ?

I smile , and we walk closer . Her pace slows as we walk even much closer

Ledi : what's going on ?

Me : I'm really sorry about everything else ,
please let's sit

I've made some kind of a setting , as soon
as I came out of here I ran some really
needed errands

I have two white candles and one yellow , a
glass of water . Some sage and a white
cloth, as well as coins and fruits

We sit down

Ledi : Princess

Me : there's someone I want you to see and please don't freak out

Ledi : who ?

Me : do you allow me to ?

She shrugs her shoulders

Ledi : I'm here already

I get on my knees and light the candles , I sprinkle the water a bit around us . Light the sage , and it burns perfectly . I learnt that I can't use incense , unless a male Manzini is the one lighting it for me

Me : it's okay , you can come out now .
She's here , but please don't scare her .
Come as peaceful as you can

I look at Ledi

Me : please don't be alarmed by how she is,
her spirit still needs to be transported first .
Before she can appear in better shape and
form , right now she's still the same as the
day she was killed

I think she gets who I'm talking about , but
she says nothing

The water starts rising , and I can't help but
feeling the fear in Ledi . I hold her hand

Ledi : Pri.....

Her mother appears through the water , but she appears as though we're looking her on a mirror

Ledi : no

The pain in her voice and cry , is definitely so felt . Should one even say sorry to someone seeing their mother like this ?

She's in rags that are just in blood , and everything is just torn apart

Me : you can talk to her

I say to her mother

MaMoloi : ngwanaka ke maswabi , ke hloleile ho tshireletsa bobeng . Ke ne ke shebella fela ke lla , ke bona ntho tseo a neng a di etsa how wena . Ke ne ke mpa ke hloka tsela ya hore ko tshireletse jwang . Ho boima metsing mona , emapa ha hosana taba . Ke kopa fela hore o ntshwarele , le wena o ntshe lehloyo le ka hare ho wena . Ha hono otswela molemo . O seke wa ifetisa ka lethabo le lerato bakeng sa bohloko boo o fetileng ho bona . Ke ya o rata haholo , ha ke yaba motswadi a phethahetseng ho wena , empa ke kopa o ntumelle ko hlokomele hona jwale . Thato o mpolaile eya , empa seo a mpolaetseng sona ha se fumana . Jwale tshwarela o fetise , hobane

bokamoso ba hao bo tjhabile haholo . Ha nka fumana kganya le nna ke tla kgona ho bontsha tsela . Ke kopa o ntshwarele , o mosadi le hara basadi ele jwale . (My child I'm sorry , I failed to protect you from evil . I just stood and watched , seeing everything that he was doing to you . I lacked a way of how I could have protected you . It's hard here in the water , but it doesn't matter anymore . I'm just asking that you forgive me , and take out this hate inside of you . It won't be of use to you . Don't let joy and love pass you , because of the hurt you've been through . I love you so much , I wasn't a better parent to you . But please allow me to take care of you right now . Thato killed me yes , but what he wanted he never got . So please forgive and let it pass , because

your future is very bright . If I can find light ,
I'll also be able to show you the way . Please
forgive me , indeed you're a woman
amongst woman)

The cry that my friend is letting out , there's
no way that I can't cry as well

Her mother poured her heart out , the only
thing that was keeping her in the water was
because she wanted to apologize to her
daughter

Me : please let go

I'm also crying , but I want her to be okay .
So I have to be strong for her sake as well

Ledi : ke ya o tshwarela mama (I forgive you mom)

It starts to rain a bit , I don't know why out of nowhere . And the strange thing is that the candles are still on and burning

Me : here

I hand her the white cloth and a marking pen

Me : write whatever you want to write , and throw it inside the water . Remember we're clearing the path for your mother , and for your healing . So we write only the good here

She smiles still crying , and she just writes without even hiding anything from me

She writes , peace love joy and happiness . Forgives and letting go . Relieving the anger and the hate . She seeks for everything that's light upon her relationship , for her to open up and let Tyler in . To trust that he won't hurt her . That may grace locate her mother where she is , may she find the light and redemption she seeks . Upon anything and everything else , she seeks healing for both her and her mother

Now I'm even crying because of what she's writing , it's just so beautiful . I pray myself that Tyler becomes the best version of himself he can for this woman

That fact that he's included in such an amazing and intimate private thing in her life , means quite a huge thing

Ledi : I'm done

Me : come

I get up , she also gets up . I pick up a few fruits and the money

Me : come with your cloth

She takes it we walk towards the over , and we stand right near it

Me : my fallen queens , Batlokoa I call upon.
I'm here with one broken heart that's
seeking healing , you have sent me and I
believe I've done my part . One of her own ,
a soul that was taken in the most hurtful
and brutal way she lies and remains in one
of your waters . I ask and call upon you all ,
wherever you are . Please hear this plea ,
hear this cry from me one of your own .
Grant this soul the light she needs , she left
one to look after in this earth . She needs to
be a guardian now and not a shadow . We
can't take her out of your waters to bury
her in this land , I ask you all to please
accept her and clear the way . Also granting
all this much healing to the soul that's left

I look at Ledi

Me : throw the cloth in

Tears stream down her face like crazy , it doesn't even make sense where she's getting this much tears

Or maybe the rain is helping as well , she throws the cloth inside the water . It floats on top for a while before it goes sinking down

I throw the fruits and the money , inside

Me : I thank you my fallen queens , I believe you have heard me . And it shall be so

Just the she goes down on her knees
wailing, but it's so different and not that of
pain like before

It's like something has been lifted off her ,
but can it be so quick ? I crouch down and
just hug her

Ledi : thank you so much

She keeps saying the words over and over
again , I hope after this much crying . She's
found her healing

I don't know after how long we get up and
walk back to the cloth

Mind you it's wet and we're also wet , we
but sit down

Me : I'm sorry I've been such a friend and
did not even realise once that you're hurt

Ledi : I hid it well

True she die , Ledi was always laughing and
happy at school . I got suspicious when I
saw the bruises

But she always brushed me off , and I didn't
want to offend her by pushing too much

Ledi : now what ?

Me : we eat this fruits , and you go take your man to the airport

We laugh , there a few fruits left I didn't throw inside the river

Me : I love you

Ledi : and I love you bunny

I haven't been called bunny in forever and I missed it

So now I guess it's task done , I hope to help her find what her mother has for her.
Because it's what Thato killed her for , and

he didn't find it . So it's my last duty before I
leave for Botswana to help her find it

.

.

.

INSERT 23

Princess

We arrive back at the palace , we're so wet
and there's no rain this side

It's crazy how it was pouring on us , and it's all sunny this side like there was no rain whatsoever

Tyler : are you for real ?

Not his crazy self , he touches Ledi all over and he's not pleased

Ledi : I'm okay

Tyler : what happened ? Where did you take her ?

Okay he's really not pleased

Me : just to the river

Tyler : look how wet she is ?

Duh ! I'm also wet but does he care ? No

Tyler : if she gets sick , it's coming out of your allowance

Me : I brought her back in time

Tyler : better pray she doesn't get sick

He says taking her to his chamber , this guy is too over protective over this woman of his

And it's beautiful , I'm his sister though
couldn't he care about me as well ?

Like hello ! I'm wet too

Voice : what happened to you ?

I turn back and look at him , he follows me
to my chamber

Me : I was at the river , it was raining

Prince : strange

Me : yeah strange

We walk in , I go take a quick shower and get dry . I put on a new change of clothes. And he's still in here , sitting on my bed . And something is off about him

Me : what's wrong ?

Prince : everything

Me : talk to me

I sit down next to him

Prince : Soso is pregnant , and everyone knows now . Tyler dealt me and said I have to marry her

No !

Me : he can't do that

Prince : he's Tyler he can do anything

Me : do you want to marry Soso ?

Prince : of course not , I don't want to

Me : then say no , and fight this . I hope you're not agreeing to this nonsense , you can't marry Soso

Prince : I know that

Me : how can you be so stupid ?

Prince : don't insult me

Me : what do you expect ? I'm very disappointed in you really . Why weren't you safe ?

Prince : imagine who's more disappointed in myself , then me more than everyone else

My brother can't marry Soso he just can't , and it's bad enough now that he's to have a baby with her . If only it was Tyler , he was going to tell everyone to go to hell right after him

But it's Prince , he's too down . I need to help him , because on his own he can't

.

.

.

Dikeledi

We're at the airport , he's about to leave .
As much as I don't want him to I know he
has to

Tyler : I don't like what happened

Me : I'm sorry , but she helped me

Tyler : with what sweetheart ?

Me : my mother , and everything that I think was just holding me back

Tyler : wait , so you're okay now ?

Me : I think so

He kisses me on my forehead

Tyler : okay , I can let it go now . But Qaphela will take you to see a doctor so you can get a shot , I don't want you getting sick

Me : is it necessary ?

Tyler : very much so

Voice : I'm here

No ways , I turn back and it's Mnotho . He's his usual subtle self

Tyler : you sure took your time

They know each other ?

Mnotho : I got held up

Tyler : you're here now , listen I need to a few sleepers in Cape Town

Mnotho : when ?

Tyler : as in like now , and I'm leaving

Mnotho : I can send the sleepers so long

Tyler : I said I need you there

Mnotho : I can't just leave right now

Tyler : was I asking you ?

Two bulls , and I'm too small right now to be in between of them . And I'm so lost in this conversation , what are sleepers ?

Mnotho : I'll catch a plane later , I need to fix a few things and get some in order

Tyler : I said now Mnotho , not later

Mnotho is done for , he takes his phone and walks a bit further from us seems like he's making a call

Tyler : I'll see you in three weeks , please take care of yourself for me

Me : you know him ?

Tyler : yes

Me : do I want to know how ?

Tyler : I'll tell you when you come

Me : are you in some secret government association or some agency ?

Tyler : no

I give up , I'm done asking

Mnotho : we can leave

Tyler : get on with it

Mnotho : kaManzini I'll see you , ace those exams

I just nod , he walks away

Tyler : I have to go now

Me : I hate this

Tyler : I know , and I hate it more than you do

Me : I'm in love with you

Tyler : I'm in love with you

We kiss , and I can't hold the test that
escape my eyes

Tyler : it's okay

I nod

Tyler : go get that shot

Me : I will

And it's a bitter sweet moment to see him
walk away

.

.

.

Prince

I called Soso so we can meet and talk , she
agree and I hope we can find some solution
to this . Because marrying her is not an
option to me at all , I can't marry her and I
will not

Voice : he's still a child

I overhear as I'm about to pass the kitchen ,
and it's my parents . That voice is my
mother's

Dad : Prince needs to learn a lesson

Mom : yes but not this harsh , Tyler was
very strict and you know this

Tyler is like my father , there's no way he
can see anything different to how Tyler sees
it

Dad : now what do you want me to do ?

Mom : talk to him please , let's find another way to deal with this . Prince can't get married this young , I won't have an 18 year old that's a father . He still has his life ahead of himself . Find another punishment for him , get him to take responsibility . Not marriage please

She's really pleading for me , I don't know what my father will say

But I'm hoping he can hear her , and have some kind of mercy upon me

Maybe I was wrong to deny the baby yes , but to marry Soso is so not necessary

Dad : I'll see what I can do

Is this some hope ? I walk past making sure they don't see me

I walk out , we agreed to meet right down the road . And when I arrive she's already there

Me : hi

Soso : baby

I sit down on the rock next to her

Me : we still each other like that ?

Soso : what ?

Me : even after everything that you've done?

Soso : baby I'm really sorry

Me : sorry doesn't change anything , and it doesn't take this away

She says nothing

Me : you didn't bother to tell me , I had to find out that you're pregnant from Zamo . Care to explain to me how everyone else got to know all this before me ?

Soso : my mother.....

Me : when you found out , the second you found out why didn't you tell me ?

Soso : baby

Me : just answer me

Soso : I'm sorry

Me : there's no longer us

Soso : what ?

Me : you hear me , we're done

Soso : but we're supposed to get married

Me : it's not going to happen , I'm not
marring you

Soso : Prince

Me : forget it , it won't happen and don't
hold your breath

I get up

Soso : but your brother said....

Me : if he cares so much about you being married into our family , he can marry you himself

I walk out and she's calling after me

I'm only this bold because it's her , I can never utter those words to Tyler

Especially after that slap he gave me . He'll kill me this time

.

.

.

INSERT 24

Tyler

The Mafia's are expecting one huge shipment of drugs

And with the cartel here , they're very much unsettled

Knowing that it could all disappear and it'll be nothing , and it'll never be found

I want those drug , as much as I make money in the families

We always get to cut through everything ,
I'm very greedy I don't do well with sharing

If the cartel gets it , then all that money is
mine . They don't benefit anything from
that

Except the business that are owned by the
cartel , which I take nothing from

My phone rings as we walk into the yard

Jase : important ?

Me : it's the princess

Jase : I'll reserve that seat

I nod , he walks away I answer the call

Me : kaManzini

Princess : Manzini , I hope I'm not disturbing ?

Me : not really , is anything the matter ?

Princess : it's about Ledi

The worry that overcomes me , she hasn't been herself since I left

But I just thought she's just missing me ,
because she also didn't want me to leave
nothing else

Me : is she okay ?

Princess : yes , yes please don't worry

Me : oh !

Princess : the ritual or ceremony whatever
it was we did at the river

Me : what about it ?

I don't even know what they did there ,
because even Ledi didn't tell me much

Except that Princess helped her , and I was
leaving then we didn't get into details

Princess : there's something her mother
said , that she was killed for something . But
the killer did not find what he was looking
for , so she wants Ledi to find that because
it's meant for her

Me : the killer you mean her brother ?

Princess : oh ! You know ?

Guess she didn't know I knew

Me : so tell me what's this something she's ought to find ?

Princess : that's what I need help with

Me : you want me to find that something for her ?

Princess : yes please

Me : does she know about this ?

Princess : I promised to find it , so she won't even mind

Me : okay , you know I'll be digging into her life to find whatever this is ?

Princess : she's your woman already

Me : this talk is done

She laughs I drop the call , one thing that my siblings are to never discuss with me is my relationship

I walk inside heading to the table where Jase is at , I'm tense all of a sudden . I sit down

Me : there's company in here

Jase : too close ?

Me : something like that , I need you to watch your back

Jase : how about I just watch yours and we forget about me right now ?

Me : it's an order

He nods , I'm first to get up and he follows .
Reaching the car there's already shot everywhere

And we're caught in the middle of this whole thing

Me : go

I say , he nods opening the door taking
astray shot to his shoulder

Jase : Fuck no

He takes his gun out and starts shooting at
everything and anything in sight

Now this is conflict , we're about to fight
our own . There'll be no loss that's for sure

But the Mafia's cannot tell which side we're
on , so there'll be blood spilled

Me : it's all not in vain

Them : not in vain

I draw my gun , better s gun fight than to
take them head on . I'll kill them , and I
can't take my own

.

.

.

Sambulo

I've been okay , I don't even want to lie and
say I have any regrets over what I've done

My heart doesn't go out for Lizzy and her child at all , like I can go on with my life now without them

Just how it's supposed to be , before she decided to complicate my life with her stupid things

I walk inside and seeing this fool , infuriates me

I pour myself a glass of whiskey

Mnotho : we share the same sentiments

I down it in one go and look at him

Me : did he have to bring you ?

Mnotho : don't be petty

Me : he didn't have to I'm sure , you're not needed here

Mnotho : unfortunately for you he needs me his very own words

Me : right

Jase walks in , and he's shot above his shoulder

Me : and what happened to you ?

Jase : where the Mafia and Cartel are concerned there's always blood . I need a patch

Mnotho : got it

Jase takes a sit , Mnotho attends to the wound taking out the bullet

Me : where is he ?

He's my only concern , sleepers or not . His safety is my priority

Jase : somewhere

Me : that's not an answer

Jase : just get the meat ready

Me : there's nothing fresh in here

Mnotho : guess he's going hunting , get the sleepers ready we can't risk anyone seeing him

I nod , sending out a message to the sleepers

Jase : shit is about to hit the fan , it's only a matter of time

Me : why were you in the midst of this ?

Jase : the families got word about the sleepers , and as always they saw it as a threat to us . We had to fight our very own men , so yeah take a guess how that went like

The cartel fighting the cartel , that must have been fun . I sure missed out

Mnotho : I don't want to be stuck here for long

Me : don't get too comfortable to his wife

He gives me a side eye

Me : don't say I didn't tell you

Jase : I think he knows

Me : he better

I've known Ty for decades and I've never
seen him in love

But now he's found it , as he's not going to
let it go he will spill blood , and go on like
nothing

.

.

Dikeledi

Exams have me by my tits , I'm trying to focus and study as much as I can

But the heart is longing for its keeper , I'm really trying I can't afford to fail . And more especially because of the news I've received

I've been accepted at Wits university and UCT , but I don't even remember applying in Cape Town

But it's fine right , because school is school
and so it doesn't matter

I'm walking out of class , I can't wait to
share this news with Tyler

I'm crossing fingers that he's going to be
excited for me , I wouldn't mind going to
Wits

But knowing Tyler he might want me to go
to Cape Town , that would be great

But I'm so sure about it , guess we'll talk
some more about it

Voice : if it isn't the man snatcher

Why her ? And she's with Soso . This girl hates my gut , since from school

Me : Enhle

I say so polite

Enhle : the bitch even knows my name

Me : no need for the name calling

They laugh

Soso : this witch is the one who took your man ?

Okay that hurts

Enhle : she's the one you said is the village witch ?

Soso : the one and only

I try to pass them , but Soso grabs my arm

Me : please let go

Enhle : you'll pay for taking Tyler away from me , witchcraft or not bitch you will pay

Soso : wait until I'm queen , and I'll show you flames girl

Queen ? All because she's to marry Prince

Soso : I'm soon to move to that palace , I'll so enjoy making your life s living hell

She's so used to it , it will be a walk in the park .

Me : please let me go

She tightens her grip on my arm , I can push her off but then I remember she's pregnant

If anything happens, then I'll be blamed for it so I won't do anything

Enhle : I'm so going to deal with you

She clicks her tongue , Soso let's go of my arm and they walk away

Now my good mood is so ruined , I just want to be all alone and not to be disturbed

I walk out to the car , and get inside .
Qaphela looks at me and he drives off

Qaphela : Miss T are you okay ?

He's soon to call me a Mrs T in telling you

Me : I'm fine

He doesn't buy it , but he doesn't ask any further

.

.

.

Princess

It's been a week now since Tyler left , and can I just say that Ledi is a walking ghost

It's like something is bothering her , but she's not saying what

And I've tried to talk to her , but she keeps saying the same thing over and over again

That she's fine and there's nothing , but I don't buy it . And I don't know if I should tell Tyler about this or what ?

She's so down , doesn't do much doesn't talk much . She prefers being all alone

She's burying herself in work , and I guess that's good because we're in the middle of exams

As much as I don't like it, but then I guess she misses her man . The love of these two is something amazing

And I long and wish that one day I get to have at least half of what they have if not all of it

If only it's what Soso and Prince shared , then maybe we wouldn't be having this problem right now

But then it's not the case , those two are just good at fucking and being some it stupid couple at school

Prince : why did you call me ?

Me : we need to talk about this Soso situation

Prince : oh situation , that's we call it now ?

Me : sit down and shut up

He's trying to get to me now , and believe you I'm not in his moods

He pulls a chair and sits down

Me : thank you

Prince : I see we have another Tyler now , poor weak me

The attitude , and right now I'm trying to help him

Me : you know what , leave it and let's see how you get yourself out of this

I get up

Prince : are you for real right now ?

Me : I'm trying to help you , and you come at me with this stinking . You don't need another Tyler right ? And that's what I've suddenly become to you . I guess he was right to throw you right in the lion's den , you brought this upon yourself . I'm done

I walk out , as much as he's upset me he's still my brother

A weak one at that , and I don't care about that . I wanted to help him because I know he needs the help

I guess I'll have to deal with Soso myself , that girl won't grow any wings here

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 25

TWO WEEKS LATER

Sambulo

Haven't we been up and down trying to keep the peace , on the sly busy adding fuel on everything . The past two weeks have been hectic , so much that we had to keep away

And leave the sleepers to take out the Mafia themselves , all this so we can avoid ourselves being compromised in all this

A few members of the family haven been taken out , that's good for us in a way

But there's a threat lurking behind us , word has it Tyler has to be removed as the leader

All this trailing back to the killing he did back in front of everyone else at the table

Mnotho : I have to leave

Me : then leave

Jase : this is not about your egos

We're at Tyler's house , he's recently just bought a house

One that he's keeping away from family , I think he wants his woman to come to his own home and not his family home

Me : I don't get why he's here

Jase : he's not here for you so....

Mnotho : fuck off

Tyler : enough you two

He says banging the table and we're all so not ready for this , I'm already on my feet

I'm a human thank you very much , I value my life . Everything that's been happening as of late

Has surely taken a toll on him , and he can't hold himself now clearly . The veins on his face are popping , his own teeth are hurting his own lips and he bleeds

The blood oozes

Jase : tell me we have some feed in this damn house ?

Mnotho : let me check

He heads to the storage , and I want to head out

Jase : we're screwed

We cannot be , I'm not ready to become food of some Golden God hell no

I'm towards the door , when Mnotho runs back in

Mnotho : this will have to do

His very own blood is making him worse ,
and these two packets are nothing

Jase : there's no meat ?

Mnotho shakes his head , spilling the
packets of blood right on the table and in
seconds they're gone

Me : that didn't do anything

Jase : shit

He takes out his pocket knife , and within a
spilt second he cuts his wrist slightly enough
for blood to come out

This creepy red eyes , golden skin thing
doesn't waste time sucking the life out of
Jase

Me : he's loosing it

Mnotho : are you going to tell him that ?

Hell no , but Jase is dying . He can't take this
anymore

I won't live with myself if I let this happen , I
don't get how it came about that Tyler has
no raw meat in this house . As if late this
thing is feeding a lot , we can't afford to
have such mistakes

I pull Jase roughly from him , Jase falls down on the floor . And I'm held by my neck , a few inches off the floor

What a way for one to die ! Just one hand choking me , I don't see how I'll survive this already I'm loosing breath

.
. .
. .

Tyler

I look around and can clearly see where I am , I'm feeling the heartbeat

And something is telling me it's one of my own , I know my men no matter what

I'm not myself right now I know , but it won't be an excuse for me to hurt them

I let go on the heavy hand , and whoever it is falls down

Voice : easy Storm

The voice keeps saying , and I know the voice . I move back , I keep backing up

Because I know whoever it is now is unsettled , I can't scare them any further

Voice : it's okay , they're okay . But they
need the hospital

I nod , not even sure if it's the right thing or
what . I think I'm backed into a corner , now
that's what it feels like

I can still taste the blood in my mouth , and
it's what brings me back to myself

My skin slowly returns to its normal self ,
but it's a quite a while before the veins go
back to normal

I look around , there's blood every where ,
more especially near the table

There's no one in here now , I walk towards the table . Using a finger I take some of the blood and lick it

Me : Jase

How stupid can he be ? Everything that took place plays right in front of my own eyes

Me : shit

Sambulo will never want to be anywhere near me now

With some luck I still have my phone in my pocket , I take it out

My eyes reflect on the screen and I'm a
mess with red orange fiery eyes

Me : fuck

I make a call , and request cleaners . Then I
call Mnotho

Mnotho : tell me you're back to yourself ?

Me : where are you ?

Mnotho : cold room

I drop the call , and head upstairs . A quick
shower is all that I need

I've changed into the semi golden god in front of my men before

But not once have I ever hurt any of them , tonight something because of simple stupid argument

And I fear what's coming . I have no control over this , and that is a problem for me . I arrive in the woods , and heading to the cold room . I run on foot leaving my car

It's not like anyone will find it , I arrive soon in no time . Jase is hooked on trips and blood transfusion , it's so useless . I almost drained him

It'll make more than just blood transfusion for him to be okay

Me : this was stupid

Mnotho : he was trying to....

Me : I haven't fed on meat in months find me some . Not even his blood will get me alright , I don't care who you have to kill to get me that meat Mnotho . Why the fuck did I bring you here for , if I have to even think about such things . Kill whoever you have to kill and bring me that meat . Unless you're okay with me going out there and finding the meat myself . I won't have any hesitation killing

Mnotho : best I go do it myself , you can get quite messy when you like

He walks out , I open the plastics walking into the other room and there's Sambulo

The bruises mark on his neck , are so fucking alarming . I hope I didn't break a few bones there

He'll never forgive me

.

.

.

Princess

I want to help my brother so bad , but he's just gone off the rails

He's just something I don't even recognise , these past two weeks have been hell

And worse my father has been in and out of the country

My mother busy with Azania , taking care of the royal duties it's just a lot for me

I have school , exams are not giving it easy to me . And then there's this trip to Botswana that I cannot ignore

It's like a done deal , after exams I'm leaving. Already I've started applying for varsity there

Crossing fingers I can get some space , because I'm late like very late

But I won't lose a year of school because of queen duties , I'll adjust and do both . The reason why I'm not even given a chance or time to take everything in

Is because the throne is vacant , there's no regent there absolutely no one is there . And the fallen queens are fearful , that people may start taking advantage and want to dethrone the Batlokoa's

I can't go against them , as much as I feel this is too fast and all its my duty . And I've made peace with the fact that , this is who I am

I just wish by the time I leave , my friend will be okay

Somehow right now she's my only worry , Ledi is not okay and it's killing me

She's not opening up , she's just become worse and whatever is wrong with her is not little

We sleep in the same chamber , but I hardly even see her . We hardly even talk

I try by all means to reach out , but she's shut me out . I've tried to hold on to this , not telling Tyler anything but now I can't anymore

I'm calling him now and it's middle of the night , I just can't take this anymore

Tyler : Princess what is it ?

I woke him up from his sleep

Me : I'm worried about Ledi , Ty she's not okay at all . I really thought the river thing made things better , but something is wrong with her

Tyler : I'll be there tomorrow

He drops the call , after saying he'll be here so casually

I don't know what's wrong with this family now . I've literally distanced myself from Prince , and I haven't been able to see Soso

School has me busy , I didn't want to be disturbed by her and this situation with Prince

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

As much as these guys are just my men ,
they're with me half the time and there's
that care for them

So I do want them to be okay and get
better, I want to be here with them yes

It's been quite a few days since they got
admitted to the cold room

They're not dead , yet not that alive but
slightly they're alive so that one counts for
something . I don't know what , but surely
something

Right now I need to leave , my sister's call
really unsettled me

Worse because I've noticed how Ledi has changed over the past weeks . She's no longer the same , even conversations with her feels like she's forcing them

I haven't given up , and I'm not willing to . I love that girl , and I said she's mine and no man will ever have her while I loose

But right now I know this is not even about us , and I feel like she'll just shock me when she opens up

I wouldn't be the right man for her if I wasn't concerned nor bothered about her behaviour

Mnotho : a word ?

Me : make it quick

Mnotho : I need to leave

There's war coming , I need my men ready
and strengthened for battle

Me : okay

Mnotho : you got that right ?

Me : I got you and it's fine you can leave

He's shocked that I'm letting him leave ,
what he doesn't get is that I need him to be
with his loved ones . I don't know what this
war holds and brings , for now he needs his
peace

Mnotho : I'm just a phone call away

I nod , he walks out . He's been a good one ,
and his kind is the one you never want to
lose

- .
- .
- .

Prince

Life has shown me it's true colours and what do you know . Maybe now I've gone and turned colour blind , because here I am in bed with Soso

After a week breaking up with her , she came around . And I think for the first time in our life

We sat down and just talked like normal civilized people . And I don't know how or when but in between after that , we got back together

So yeah , I can say we're together now . We haven't said anything about any of the things that affected us

The whole pregnancy , I guess we both think one day we'll figure it out as we go on

Soso : your mind seems to be far away

She's at the palace , she's been coming around for a lot as of late

And with exams being done in a week , and schools closing . The families will meet and hopefully be done with this thing

Me : I'm just thinking babe

Soso : about us I hope

I smile

Me : I love you baby

Soso : and I love you , now are you excited about this weekend ?

Me : yeah I am

She kisses me I kiss her back but she's quick to pull out , and somehow I'm a bit relieved

We're already having sex everyday , it feels like a job that must be done now instead of just two lovers enjoying pleasure from each other

Soso : that drag your brother calls a girlfriend will know me well , she's messed with the wrong one . And if she thinks I've been hurting her so far , she hasn't seen anything . By the time I'm done with her , she'll never forget the name Enhle

Surely there can only be one girlfriend for my brother that my sister knows . Unless there's another one here I know nothing about , Tyler is very much capable of doing that

Me : what , who's this Enhle ?

Soso : please don't tell me you're also team Ledi as well

Me : I'm not on any one's team

She smiles brushing my face

Soso : you should be on my team , just take a look at this

She reaches for her phone and hands it to me , honestly I don't want to lie

It's too damning , the things that are written in here . There are photos and not pleasing ones

Me : you did this ?

Soso : yes , your brother wasn't hers . She took him from Enhle , and so she doesn't deserve to be loved by someone's else's man and get to be happy about it

I can't stop reading about this , that she slept with her brother numerous and countless times

The witch story , even with the shadow . It's all right in here

Me : is any of this true ?

Soso : surely you're not going to accuse me babe , this girl is not so nice and innocent as she looks . As much as I'm grateful to your

brother , because if it wasn't for him we
wouldn't be getting married soon . He also
doesn't get to hurt Enhle and gets his
happily ever with this girl

Tyler hurt me , and what Soso just said just
gave me one brilliant idea

Maybe , just maybe my own brother needs
to feel a taste of his medicine

For him to get hurt right where it hurts ,
Ledi

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Has two weeks ever left like it's two years ,
and still some more going ?

I think right now I'm at that point in my life
where I'm like , nothing will ever go right

Just when I thought , it's okay . Like I'll get
there , I'll be fine and find peace . There just
had to come Enhle and Soso , from out of
nowhere

And they've turned my life a living hell , like there's nothing about me that's not out there

And worse , the rape thing is everywhere around the college . How they got to know that beats me

The only thing is that , it is said I'm the one who was too happy to sleep with my own brother

It's too painful , the things that everyone is now suddenly saying about me

Even people who don't know me , everyone now has a say about me

There's abortions going around , there's the witchcraft thing again

Soso and Enhle weren't playing , they're making my life a living hell and boy are they still continuing to do that

I'm back to being that Dikeledi , who cries everyday . The one who always asks the question why

The one who's back to being alone now , always cooped up staying away from everyone

I'm back to being with two personalities when I'm with Princess

But I make it a point to avoid her , and I always use exams and school as an excuse

If I'm being honest it's all a lot , I can't take it anymore

I'm no suicidal person , but now I finally get it and understand that suicidal people are not selfish

Right now I have no idea why I'm still living , I have no family I have nothing

Besides Tyler I'm all alone , and it doesn't sit well with me . He's a man and not my everything , my life does not evolve around him

He may sleep tonight and wake up changed tomorrow

So what exactly am I living for ? I'm tired

Voice : kaManzini

I have my head bowed down , he's been AWOL for these two weeks

Mnotho : come on , I know you can hear me

I stop walking

Mnotho : hey

He holds my arm pushing my t-shirt up a bit, exposing my arm but I'm too quick to hide it

Not sure if he saw it or not

Mnotho : are you okay ?

Me : I'm fine

Mnotho : okay well I....

Me : I have to go

I walk away from him , heading to the car .

I just greet Qaphela he greets back and
drives to the palace

I can't do this anymore , if I die tonight I
won't mind .

.

.

.

INSERT 26

Princess

I thought Tyler would be here by now , but he hasn't arrived yet

I don't want to think that he's not coming anymore , because I Ledi seriously needs him right now

I walk out of my chamber only go bump into Prince and his loose skank

Soso : hi Princess

I nod and walk past them

Soso : she's so rude

Prince : don't mind her babe

That changed too quickly right ? One minute he denied the baby

Wanted nothing to do with her , had some stupid mini break up . And now all is well in their world

I honestly can't wait to leave , home is starting to become a bit toxic for me

Dealing with problem after problem , I need to get away from this place for my sake of peace and sanity

Mom : someone is not happy

I smile and sit down next to them

Me : it's just a lot going on

Mom : I can see that

Me : and I'm tired

Mom : you be to be strong baby

Me : my queen I've been strong , am I not allowed to just be carelessly tired like I am right now ?

Mom : I'm sure you're allowed , it's your feelings and emotions so

I take Azania from her crib , my baby is growing up . Her and Ledi are the only people I'm so going to miss more than everyone else

Me : Ledi is not okay , right when I thought she was going to get better . Tyler left and everything changed

Mom : changed how ?

I didn't want to talk about this , but I'm also carrying a lot

And just maybe talking about this won't hurt anyone

Me : she's shut down , she doesn't talk . It's like she's not even here

Mom : maybe it's school baby

I know she doesn't even believe her own words but it's okay

Me : I'll give her some space my queen

Mom : now that's wise

I nod

Me : another one who needs my space is your son

She sighs , Prince has become even too much on her

Me : you know I get why Tyler did what he did . But Prince has taken the whole thing way too wrong . He's always moody , always has an answer for everything . He's just not the brother I knew , he's changed and not for the better

Mom : I don't know what to do with your brother , and right now I don't even want to help him

Me : my queen

This is shock to me , she shakes her head

Mom : Prince needs some tough love , he needs to get burnt so he can learn a hard lesson about playing with fire

Will that ever happen ? And right at this moment I don't think he's the kind of person I need helping me in Botswana

.

.

.

Tyler

I should have been home by morning , but it's already noon now . I got stuck and had things to do , but I think what matters now is that I'm going home

Late as it , it's always said that it's better late than ever . I hope this one counts as well . My phone rings and it's Mnotho , we haven't talked since he left

Me : Ngonyama

Mnotho : you need to come home , she's self harming and she's a danger to herself

Me : what ?

He can scare me but not like this

Me : Mnotho !

I shout

Mnotho : I noticed something on her arm
earlier on

Me : need I ask

Mnotho : it looked like razor cuts , right in
her wrist going . I know you're busy there
but you need to come back

Shit , I feared this . A broken person with everything building inside can only resort to such things

Because they think no one understands , and nothing makes sense

Mnotho : I couldn't keep quite , I think she really needs some great help

I drop the call not knowing what to do with myself

I can't loose Ledi , because one thing I'm certain about is that there's no another out there like her

What's going on with my woman ? Why would she self harm and inflict pain on herself ?

I know she's been through a lot , but wasn't she getting better ?

I feel like such a failure right now , and how did I miss all of this ?

I call her and she doesn't answer , I call over five times and it's the same thing

I call Princess ,it's rings unanswered quite for a while

Princess : Bhuti (brother)

Me : where is she ?

Princess : taking a bath

Me : are you sure ?

Princess : yes

Me : go check on her and make sure she's
okay

I drop the call, few minutes later she sends
a text that she's really taking a bath

And it doesn't ease my fear at all

.

.

.

Dikeledi

After Princess checks on me , which I found very strange

Why would she suddenly come go check on me this late ? As if I'm going something I'm not ought to be doing

Or maybe I'm just reading too much into it ,
I've just finished studying

I'm ready for bed now , but I'm a bit tired
nothing a great hot bath won't be able to fix

I prepare a bath for myself , I'm in the
quarter I was given to use

I started sleeping in here since yesterday , I
think I need to give Princess her space

Not in a bad way no , but I'm starting to tire
her out that much I cannot deny . I grab my
towel and my phone catches my eye , it has
been ringing all this time

I wasn't aware and I didn't hear it , because
it was on silent

And it's Tyler , I haven't talked to him all
day today . I return the call

Tyler : Sweetheart....

Me : Manzini I to take a bath quickly , I'll
return the call soon I'm in love with you

I hang up , don't ask me why I did that
because I don't know

As of late it feels like I was very selfish to
begin with , falling in love with him

He wasn't mine to have , but I went right ahead and did it

And now I have him , and my past is haunting me all because of having him

None of this would be happening , if I wasn't dating Tyler

Enhle wouldn't be gunning after me the way she has been

And Soso would have no reason to feel like I need some kind of a punishment . But it's done now and I'm tired of it all . I get in the bathtub and settle fine closing my eyes

Taking long deep breaths , because nothing sane comes to my mind

Except how fucked up my life is , how much tears are my daily food

I'm even tired of praying because even God seems tired of me

Don't even get me started on my mother , where is she now ? I need her but I'm all alone

I open my eyes and already in crying , surely this can't be healthy

And one thing that's for sure is that I'm
tired crying everyday , and not seeing any
way out

I reach out to the box of razors , there's
nothing damning like emotional pain

It's breaks and damages one to the core ,
and there's no cure for it

I take out one razor , I start off with small
cuts . As they blood comes out more cuts
and more blood

Seeing this blood makes the pain bearable
at least I know why I'm in pain

I'm hurt and bleeding , unlike emotional pain that's unseen

I sink lower in the tub , I feel like I'm loosing consciousness . This is not how it was supposed to be

Me : I'm....sorry

I close my eyes slowly , as much as I'm fighting to keep them open I can't

.

.

.

INSERT 27

Tyler

Arriving at the palace and it's almost midnight , I go knock in Princess's chamber

She takes a while before opening , it's late and I just had to wake her up

Me : please wake her up

She rubs her eyes , I fell bad that I woke her up . But I need to see my own woman so we can talk

Princess : she's in her quarter

Something about this is not right , she was supposed to call after the bath

But she never did and I called , countless times and there was no answer . And only to find out she's sleeping alone ? I don't trust this at all

I run to her quarter , and it's useless to knock . It takes everything in me to bring the door down

I rush inside she's nowhere in her , I go to the bathroom and a pool of blood water welcomes me in the bathtub

She's just laying naked in cold water , that's been turned red by her own blood

I pick her out , and dry her with a towel quickly . The first item of clothing I see works just fine

I run out with her in my arms to the car , right now I'm about to drive to a hospital with a person I don't know if she's alive or not

I did not bother even checking a pulse , it feels like forever when I finally arrive

And I run inside with her , it's me again with the same girl again

She's taken away from me , and I'm not allowed anywhere near the ward

And now sitting on these benches , it sinks in she could be dead

It's been how long hours she took that bath, and I don't know when she started cutting herself

She could have done it right before the bath, this is a fucking mess

Something caused this I know , there's no way that out of nowhere she'll get like this. Right when she was getting better , and I hope no one is responsible for any of this

If I have to bury my woman , I won't be the only one . The earth will surely feast on that day

.

.

.

Prince

We woke up to one shock today , and it's a mess no one knows what's what .

Apparently Tyler is here , he can be the only one who broke this door down . And he's the one who found Ledi , as much as I'm

praying and hoping that it's not her . But we all can see that it's her , she's the one who was in the tub and bled this much

The question is , she bled this much from what ? Because we all have no idea

And Princess is a crying mess , she's wailing so badly and it's not a good sight

We don't even know how to comfort her , because now she's convinced Ledi didn't survive this

I'm keeping the faith and hope , even though with this much blood one can't help but think she's gone

Dad : Tyler is not answering his phone

Mom : there's no way he's going to answer his phone , I'm sure he's not himself right now

Dad : but I need to talk to talk to him

He's frustrated and I think also worried and fearful for Ledi's life

My phone rings and it's Soso , such bad timing . But I'll miss one call and she'll make a big deal out of it

I walk away from everyone else

Me : babe

Soso : you're late

As if I don't know , and she's already acting like she's my wife

Me : you'll have to walk or something . I'll come before the exam starts

Soso : Prince you're not serious

Me : unfortunately I am , look babe I have to go okay . I love you

Soso : Prince

Me : I said I love you

She sighs

Soso : and I love you daddy

I chuckle dropping the call , and as soon as that is done

I'm back to worrying about Ledi again , I know I want Tyler hurt

And obviously when she's hurt , it'll hurt him even more . But this is not what I meant . And I hope what happened here wasn't because of what Soso and her friend

did . Because if it is , then I played a part in it . I saw it and didn't bother to call them to order

Because I saw how it would serve me if she was to get hurt , to a point that it affects Tyler

Does she have guts to take her own life though ? The thought hits my mind

And now I'm shit scared , already we don't know what happened

But now I have a feeling this is what happened , and it can only be because of what was said and written about her

I played my part in this , and it was so not worth it

Because some of those things written there even I don't believe them

I've never believed that she was a witch , nor that there's some shadow following her

I risked being hated at school just so I can kill this rumours about her

And now I'm letting them happen , and it brought me some kind of joy . How sick is that ? All because I want to hurt my own brother

I don't believe that whole she seduced her brother nonsense , nor the abortions

Fuck ! What have I done ?

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

I didn't sleep a wink , I was wide awake the whole night right on this bench

How was I to sleep when I don't know what's happening with my heart in there

And I won't even call anyone useless or anything like that

Because all night doctors went in and out of that ward , which only told me they're trying and doing their best to save her

She must have damaged something without a doubt

I didn't even bother asking anyone anything, I let them go in and out doing their job

I don't know this , but right now I want to cry . Something I don't know , and I doubt it's even normal to me

But I guess when it comes to her , I'm human and I have feelings as much

Right now I'm hurt I don't want to lie , and I'm not hurt at her at all

All I now is that , I don't want to lose her . There's life without her , but I don't want to know how it feels like

Voice : Mr Zungu

I life my eyes and it's one white doctor

Doc : please follow me to my office

Me : if you know what's best for you , you'll tell me she's okay . You will not call me to your office to tell me that you guys failed and she's dead

Doc : we tried our best , and we believe she will leave

Me : then take me to her and not your office

Doc : there a few things we need to discuss

Me : say them right here right now , and take me to her

Doc : we found marks , like cuts that are a bit older than the recent ones that brought her here . So she's been doing this for a while , and has been very careful about this. The intention wasn't to hurt herself to an extent , for some whatever reason she was doing this . Hurting herself this deep reaching her vein , was a pure mistake . I'm not applauding this , but I'm stating she wasn't killing herself . She must have lost consciousness which caused her to go deeper unaware . I suggest some therapy for this , whatever she's going through is very much deeper than the scar seen

Me : I'll get to it , now take me to her

We walk to her ward , and she's laying lifeless on this tiny bed with a bandage on her wrist going up her arm

Doc : she will be okay , if she fights to pull out

One thing my woman is , is a fighter and certainly not a coward

Doc : I'll leave you to it

He walks out , I sit right on the bed

Me : sweetheart

She will wake up , because I will not leave here until she's awake

She can't be gone for a vein cut , won't I just kill everyone for this mere stupid mistake . As the white man called it

She moves her hand to her face , that's just strange but she opens her eyes . The second she lays eyes on me , she cries . And there's nothing that's pouring out pain like a silent cry

Me : who did this ?

I hold her hand

Ledi : I wasn't..... trying to kill.... Myself . I
just...wanted....the pain to st....stop . I
just....wanted it....to hurt less

I hug her tight , and let her cry . And it's
while before she done

I have nothing on my mind right now and
nothing matters

Me : who did this ?

Ledi : it....it started with Soso and Enhle .
They said I sedu....seduced Thato . I had

abortions and started thewhole witch
and shadow thing . Enhle was getting....back
at me forfor being with you

In any case it's forgotten , I don't hold back
hurting anyone . Not even women

Me : you will never do this ever again , this
self harm it stops . I don't ever want to deal
with this ever again

But no one hurts her and gets away with it ,
not while I breathe

- .
- .
- .

Princess

I missed my exam , it really isn't that important over my friend

I feel like I've failed Ledi again , and I'll get to help her when the damage is already done again

What kind of a friend am I ? Now I can't stop crying . My eyes hurt my head is banging

Mom : can I come in ?

I nod , I'm in bed

Mom : I brought some food

Me : I...can't eat

Mom : baby please

Me : mommy what if she's dead ?

Mom : no , no don't talk like that

Me : you saw that water , it was too red she bled too much . Why couldn't I sense anything ?

Mom : you couldn't have known

Me : I went to check on her , I knew and saw she wasn't okay for weeks and weeks

Mom : don't blame yourself for this , Ledi is broken and she needs help . I think we can all see that now , this is deeper than how we all thought it was

Me : Ledi was fine , something must have caused this . Someone did this to my friend

She holds me but I can't stop crying , it's too painful . I can't loose Ledi I just can't

Me : mommy what if she hurt herself , what if she did this to herself ?

Mom : baby please , you'll drive yourself crazy with all these thoughts

I can't help it , and the thought of my friend trying to kill herself or maybe have killed herself . Breaks me to the core

.

.

.

INSERT 28

Dikeledi

If there's anyone that's living up to their name , it sure has to be me

I need an end to this life , I can't go on like this . But one thing I'm certain of , is that I'm a coward to kill myself

If I had died in that bathtub , it wasn't going to be because it was the intent

But it was just one mistake , I'm not saying
cutting myself was a mistake

But to that deep end extent , that was the
mistake . I just wanted to ease the pain ,
not to end the life

Even though that would have been nice ,
now I have just added to another thing for
them to grill me for

How I'll face life after this , I really don't
know . I'm too weak for all this

And scars that run within , are more deeper
than scars on the outside

Maybe Tyler is angry with me , he stayed here all day and didn't say anything

He got me food and clothes , helped me bath . All this he wasn't saying to me

When he left he just have me a forehead kiss and left

Maybe this is the end of us , where we call it quits . And if that's the case I don't blame him

No man wants a mentally disturbed girlfriend , why would he want me ? I'm sure he's concluded that I'm a mental case , who tried to kill herself in a bathtub

Just because people said things about her ,
it was just words

Maybe I'm looked at as if I overreact or I'm
just a cry baby , but the extent of pain and
damage these words do to me

Are beyond physical pain , maybe I am just
weak . That's why I can't take them

But people can spit Vernon with their
mouths , and I don't think they see the
damage they cause

Voice : don't think too hard about it

What does he want ?

Me : what are you doing here ?

He walks in and sits down

Mnotho : I see you're well

Me : you did not answer me

Mnotho : I don't want to be here , but Tyler wants the best watching over you

Me : watching over me ?

Mnotho : yeah so you don't make any more scares

Wow really ?

Me : is that what he said ?

Mnotho : in his very own words

Me : tell him...

Mnotho : he pays me and not you , so go on with your doings and don't mind me here

So now I'm some kind of a prisoner

Princess

Was I so relieved to hear that Ledi is fine , I was so scared . And I really thought she didn't make it

The sight in that bathtub was just so disturbing

I can only imagine how seeing her literally in that tub looked like . Tyler is nothing like then brother I know , he denied us going to see her

He didn't even tell us where she is , just that she's fine . I was sad and a bit hurt to be honest

Because I wanted to see her , but I can respect my brother enough to keep my distance

And I just appreciated that he told us , and didn't just keep quiet

Me : I hope to protect you with all that I am, even with the far distance . I vow that I'll surely try and do my very level best , to be the best sister to you . A way much better one than how I've been to Ledi .

She smiles , and the way she's looking at me
you'd swear she can hear what I'm saying

Me : I don't ever want to fail you the way
I've failed her , twice now . What does that
say about me as a sister ? I don't want
those mistakes with you

Voice : you're a sister that's human and one
that makes mistakes , and always does her
best to care for those close and dear to her
heart . But you're not God my princess , you
can only do so much

The eyes of this little one , trail to where
the voice is coming from

Me : who's that ?

She looks at me , such a cute thing

Me : my king

Dad : I leave a few days and things go sour

He kisses both our cheeks , and sits down
next to us

Me : how have you been ?

Dad : Princess I'm the father here , don't go
be like your brother

I laugh

Me : Tyler is the adult , he even feels like he's my father so

Dad : don't go taking after him

Me : he's my blood , it's kinda impossible not to

We sit in silence for a bit , with just Azania making babies sounds

Me : they told you what happened ?

Dad : all of it

Me : we're falling my king

Dad : advice your father my future queen

My father though

Me : shouldn't it be the other way around ?

Dad : you're already a great queen in making , you'll make a very amazing queen I have no doubts about that

Me : I hope to never disappoint you

Dad : don't disappoint the people of Batlokoa and most importantly yourself

He's right on the fallen queens words

Dad : but you can share some of your wisdom with me , see how this kingdom will fall

Me : make Tyler king

He's taken aback by my words , and believe me you so I am . I don't doubt Prince at all , but that boy will never make a king this kingdom needs

Dad : Tyler is half blue blood

Me : and he'll make a better king Manzini has ever seen , no offence my king

He smiles

Dad : and how do I do that ?

Me : he may have no beast , no powers whatsoever . But he has the heart and courage , and that's the kind of king Manzini needs . Tyler is not told he tells , he commands he leads and he's not led . Which is way more than I can say about Prince , he's being led a pregnant teenager right now . We're falling now , but with him in charge we will perish

Dad : that may be true , but I still don't see how I'll get a half blood on this throne ?

Me : you can make means , ancestors can always be appeased . But I don't see Prince as king , but then again that's just me saying

I hope my father can find a way to make this work , if he ever decides to listen to my two cents

- .
- .
- .

Prince

I don't know what's worse knowing that
Ledi tried to kill herself , and knowing I
played a part in that

I do blame myself , I might not have all the
details . But what was said was harsh too
harsh

And she's been through a lot , she didn't
need any of that

Or hearing my sister tell my father that if
I'm to be king this kingdom will perish

Seems like no one has any faith on me ,
even my own twin sister

And knowing my father , and he's already called me a weakling . He might just put Tyler on the throne and not me

And he won't even think twice about his decision , he will just do it

And no one will even question him , it's like now that I'm an outcast in this family

Mom : it's dinner time

We bump each other at the door

Me : I'm not hungry

Mom : I'm not asking you

After overhearing that conversation between my father and Princess I'll rather be on my own right now

But I can't defy the queen , so I follow her go the dinning quarter . I greet only my father and Princess greet back

Even Tyler is here , and something is strange about his eyes . They're not their usual colour

Dinner goes so awkward for me that is because everyone else is conversing and all

Me : may I be excused ?

Dad : okay

I get up and walk out , reaching the back I'm startled by a shadow only it's Tyler

Me : you....

Tyler : scared you , I know . Come here

He doesn't wait for me to say anything he drags me , and his hand is doing the most on my arm

Me : where are we going ?

I'm scared honestly , we're leaving the palace heading to the veld

Me : you're hurting me

And he doesn't care

Me : Tyler !

Tyler : I haven't done anything , I'm so going to enjoy beating the shit out of you . While teaching you how to fucking man up , and stop being a fool

I try pulling back but he's too strong for me, I scream and I'm met by another scream

The shock seeing that it's Soso and Enhle ,
tied together

Me : please....I didn't write anything okay . I
know I was to keep quite and encourage it ,
but I didn't do it . Please Tyler

I remember my father's words , that he
won't hesitate killing for Ledi . What was I
doing messing with a Mafia's woman ?

Me : Tyler....please ...

Before I can even finish saying what I
wanted say , he shines like gold pure gold

Mind you it's dark it's later , were in a veld heading to woods and he's shinny . You can see him clearly , as his eye changes to red orange fiery furnace

Me : Ty.....

I fall down trying to run , and it's like I'm stuck I can't get up

He goes to Enhle and Soso , brings them apart . He holds Enhle with her throat

You can tell she's struggle , and she's begging him but even the voice is not coming out

He kicks her on her knees and it's fucking painful , I don't need to see her face to tell nor even her screams and cries

You can hear her bones cracking , his kicks are breaking her bones . I'm struck I can't run away

Soso is not even my focus right now , it's when he throws Enhle down

And he starts ripping her apart into pieces , he's not using a knife or anything weapon

Just his hands , he's tearing her apart . This is not my brother

Soso is right there screaming her lungs out ,
I don't know how I've thrown up

No one can witness a person being killed in
this manner and ever be alright ever again

He turns and looks at Soso , I want to say
something to ask for her life to be spared .
For the sake of my child

But I can't bring myself to utter anything ,
she tries to get up only she falls down .

He has blood everywhere on his clothes , he
didn't just kill Enhle . He teared her to
pieces and as his foot rests on Soso's throat

Now I cry for my child , he rips her clothes off like nothing . Leaving her naked , and I don't know what to call this

He clings his hands on her stomach and tears her open , I'll never forget her scream ever

It'll be a lifetime before I forget this sight . How is he even tearing her with just his hand ?

Me : no !

I scream but it's useless , he takes her insides like nothing . And I'm back to throwing up again

This is beyond disgusting it's so fucking disturbing

And she suffers the same fate as Enhle , I can't even bare to watch as he rips and tears every part of her body into chopped pieces with just his hands

It's when he walks to me , I get on my knees

Me : I didn't mean to hurt her , I'm sorry

He pulls me up , and I'm so not ready to die and not like this

Me : p....lease

Slowly he turns back to himself , I can't even breathe alright I'm panting . And there's vomit all over me

Tyler : I'm not done with you

And he drags me , I swear somewhere along the way I collapse . Will I suffer the worst fate than them ?

.
. .
. .

INSERT 29

Sambulo

I open my eyes and realise I'm in the cold room . At least I haven't lost my mind , because I remember exactly what happened

See me again interfering into people's things , I should have let Jase be

He wanted to be the Messiah and feed Tyler, and I got the wrong end of it all

My neck hurts so fucking back , I wonder if he didn't break any bones

Voice : you're back to the land of the living

And he has to bring these idiots to be around me , first it was Mnotho now this one

Me : w....

Shit my voice , it's a fucking disaster

Crane : chill it , you've been through....

Me : shut up

Crane is one insane human being that's next to Tyler

It must run in the mixed blood , I really don't like his kind

He's one of the cartel sleepers , the best we have . But he must never hear me utter those words out of my mouth

Crane : you may hate me , but welcome back to the land of the living

I hope I get to live , and to never ever go in contact with Tyler in this manner ever again. Once was enough , and I don't wish for it

Me : where is Jase

Crane : in one deep coma

Me : no ways

Crane : it'll be a miracle if he comes out of it

Me : we...believe in ...miracles now ?

Crane : it's all about the saying

Doesn't even make sense

-
-

Prince

I spent the whole night in a corner wide
awake , sleep didn't find me whatsoever

Everything that happened keeps playing in
my mind it's like a scratched video

One that doesn't pass a certain play , and
keeps on playing it over and over and over
again

What is Tyler ? Because that was no human whatsoever

There's no way that a human being can do all that , break a whole human being like that

Open a person like that with their bare hands . I swear if that's what we are , then thank you I don't want it

I'm fine as weakling as I am , I can't take being that ruthless like ever

My father warned me , but he didn't tell me all . What I saw last night , even the Mafia's he scared me with are nothing compared to

that . That was no beast , and it was definitely not human at all

.

.

.

Princess

One would swear we're cursed in this Kingdom , it was the whole council and two guards disappearing . We have remains of a human body shredded to pieces , right in the veld

Makes me wonder if we have wild animals
roaming and running wild in this kingdom
all of the sudden

Me : dad is taking a strain

Mom : understandably

Me : where is Prince ?

Mom : I saw him in his chamber earlier on ,
and I must say he worried me

Me : how so ?

Mom : he was so out of it

Me : strange

Like what's going on here ?

Me : can it because of the news we heard ?

Mom : baby I don't know

Me : let me go talk to him

I walk out to his chamber and I knock and knock , for like a while

Me : Prince

I call out his name , quite a few times . But he doesn't answer . I open the door , and it's not locked . But I look around and it's empty

Something is a miss and it's a bit off , he's nowhere to be found

It's so not like him , my brother is many thing and as of late he's a lot . But to just disappear

I walk back to the house , and find everyone in the kitchen even my father and brother

Mom : and ?

Me : he's gone my queen

Mom : gone !

Me : there's no sight of him

Dad : that boy is pulling stunts now , he just ran away and that's it . He fucking needs to grow the hell up

He walks out fuming

Mom : what is happening in this kingdom ?

Tyler : he just ran away , the king is right

Mom : you don't know that

Tyler : I will find him , he will be a man
when he comes back here . Damn we're
tired dealing with his shit

He also walks out , now I'm wondering what
we are missing here

Why would Prince run away from home ?

-
-
-

Tyler

My father has called me over to his chambers , as a king he has his own private chambers that he occupies on the far side of the palace

Me : my king

Dad : come through

I walk inside and take a seat

Dad : I need to talk to you about a pressing matter

Me : I'm listening

Dad : you heard about the human bodies pieces found at the veld

Me : mhm

Dad : should I be concerned ?

Me : why , are you accusing me ?

Dad : I would never because you have always been straight with me

Me : and these remains , or body parts as you said . They're very much responsible for my woman ending in a bathtub bleeding to

death . Your kingdom has failed her , and I
fucking ended that injustice done to her

Dad : the girl again

Me : like I said the first time , I don't know
about you . But I won't hesitate to spill
blood for the woman that owns my heart

Dad : did I really have to have sons like you
two

Me : don't put me in the sentence as him

Dad : he's an idiot , weak fool . You're hard-
headed you kill like it's a hobby . And how

the hell did you kill them like that ?

Me : I just did , believe me you're best left not knowing

Dad : is this going to be the legacy I leave for my kingdom ?

Me : you're loosing me

Dad : a weak son that can't be king , a killer one who doesn't want the throne

Me : it's not my throne and I don't want it , I'll never want it

Now I know why he called me here , I don't want this throne and I'll never sit on it

Dad : Tyler...

Me : I'm not going to be tied down in a village , I have my life out there . And I won't change it for anything

Dad : I killed for this throne , and I refuse to let it perish like this . Now I suggest you start making peace with that one day you're to succeed me

And he dismisses me

Me : this was very one sided

He says nothing , I get up and walk out

It'll be a cold day in hell before I sit on that throne . I'll make that boy a man he will wake up

.

.

.

Dikeledi

If there's anyone out there that's against me , well they're doing it very well

And making sure that they're doing it all to perfection . A high power certainly must be against me , and I feel it all by full force

I've missed about 5 exams in these last two days , and this doctor doesn't seem to want to let me go anytime soon

So much for trying to make it into this life with the education key

And it seems like I messed it up again , there's no way I'm seeing variety next year

That's off the list and I should just forget about that dream

Serves me right for ending up here , as if I didn't have enough on my plate

And now I have Mnotho busy crowding me everyday and night he's such a bore

And then there's this one , who comes here everyday . Stares at the walls and nothing

And say nothing to me until he lives , that's what he's been doing for the past two days

Me : what do you want ?

He's standing by the window looking outside

Me : can you just leave

Tyler : ngizwa ngawe manje ? (You're telling me what to do now)

Me : what do you want here ?

He turns , I'm hurt and sad not to mention getting annoyed

Me : everyday you come here and stare at nothing , you don't talk to me . Tyler if I disgust you this much , why don't you just leave ?

Again I'm ignored

Me : okay then I'll leave

I get up , and walk to the bathroom change into my clothes

Walking out , with my bag packed the doctor walks in

Doc : Ms Moloji where are you going ?

Me : you're not blind now , you can see that I'm leaving

Doc : but I said....

Why is he getting all aggressive ?

Me : I heard what you said , now hear what I'm saying . I'm leaving and you won't keep me here against my will

Doc : actually I can , you're under suicide watch . You're a danger to yourself and everyone around you

Me : don't worry about myself , and if you must know there's no one around me . And bare in mind you can't force me to live if I don't want to , this is my life

I walk past him

Tyler : talk to her like that again I'll castrate you

Okay , that somehow gives me a smile . I miss my man , but I don't know where we are right now

He takes my bag from me , and takes my hand into his

I don't even pull out , because it feels amazing to have him this close and touching me

-
-
-

INSERT 30

Sambulo

I thought I was bad , but Jase is something else . He really was sacrificing himself here

And from the look of things , it'll be a while before he's back to his normal usual self

I hope he makes it through , he's one of our own and not just some guy . We might be killers , but we hate loosing one of our own

Crane : you have a call

He's been looking after me , as much as I don't like these guys

They'll always pull up when the tough gets going

He hands me the phone , and it's Tyler

Me : Manzini

Tyler : you're alive , that's good I need you here

Fuck no

Me : I....I can't

I don't even know what's here , but I want to stay far away from him I really do

He made me turn right at the green pastures , surely he doesn't expect me to be okay with himself

Tyler : tomorrow don't be late Sambulo

He drops the call

Me : is it because he pays me ?

Crane : I don't know about your pockets
and bank balances

Me : where is he ?

Crane : his home town

So he's in KZN ? Now I wonder who is he
about to kill there now

Me : get me a flight to KZN for tomorrow

I hand him back his phone

Crane : you're fine now , I think I can stop
doing this

Me : it's just a flight ticket , I'm not asking you to wash my underwear

He walks out , and I can't believe that I'm so soon I'm to see him again

He did a number on me , I need some space from him

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Call it shame or whatever , but last night we arrived here and I didn't want to see anyone

I know they know , and to them I tried to kill myself . They won't get how it was a mistake

I should be waking up now , getting ready for college . But after missing so many exams

I doubt I still have space there , and surely Tyler won't pay anymore . I've ruined my life , and I need one chance to redeem myself . Hopefully I can do that next year

I don't see how I'll make it anywhere if I have no education , when I already have nothing and no one

Tyler : stop moving too much

He says with such a cold voice , I think I've just gone back

Yes he has a cold voice , but it was somehow always sweet when talking to me

But now it's different , maybe he's really done with me . I move one last time getting off his grip , he doesn't even say anything . He just turns his back and faces the other way

I walk to the bathroom with one sad heart
to be honest

I'm not one to nag anyone , and I don't
think I'm about to start right now . I love
Tyler so much , but if this is it then it's fine

.

.

.

Tyler

I arrive at the college , and I'm late .
Because I wanted to come earlier on

But that woman of mine is something else , she's so off and I get she picked that from me . But there's nothing I can do when I get like this , worse I don't know how long it'll take

I can't just switch up , like I'm a chameleon . I'm off now and it'll stay like that until I find myself again

Dean : Mr Zungu , a pleasure to finally meet you

We walk to his office and it down

Dean : what brings you by ?

Me : Dikeledi Moloji

Dean : a student of our own ?

Me : you're really asking me that ?

Dean : the college is big , and I for one does not know many students

Me : she's the one who made you a millionaire , so believe me you when I say you ought to know her

He swallows getting all nervous

Dean : she uhm....she missed quite a few exams

Me : and you're going to give her another chance to write them

Dean : what ?

Me : don't ask me questions when I tell you something , I don't take being questioned very well

Dean : I'm sorry I can't do this , I've already bent rules to get her admitted in the first place

Me : everybody has a price

I'm willing to pay this fool again , just so she can write exams . I know this stresses her out

Dean : no , I'm sorry I can't do this

I get up

Me : okay then , let your wife and son suffer the same fate

Dean : you leave my family out of this

I walk towards the door , he releases one huge sigh

Dean : fine , she can come in tomorrow morning

I turn back and look at him

Me : that wasn't so difficult

I walk out heading to my car , as much as I don't see Ledi needing this education

She wants it and I won't deprive her of it

.

.

Princess

Prince is still not found , and I thought Tyler would have found him by now

I'm starting to fear that he really run away , and maybe something bad has happened to him

Or maybe he just doesn't want to be found , my brother really doesn't uses his head to think

What can he possibly run away from ? And more especially in the middle of our exams

I really don't get him at all , whatever is going on with him is no little thing

I'm glad though that Ledi is back home , we missed her last night apparently she was tired

And this morning she wasn't at breakfast , Tyler didn't even make an excuse for her

He just left , and if I know my friend I know she just can't stand to face any of us after what happened

I look for her in her quarter and she's not there , as usual when Ty is here she occupies his chamber

I find her packing her bag , now I don't like what I'm seeing . Or is she going back to her quarter ?

Me : Ledi

She doesn't even look at me , the bandage on her wrist to her arms catches my eye . She really cut herself , I thought it wasn't going to be true

Me : please talk to me

I sit down next to her , she's on her feet packing . I sit on the bed next to her

Me : what's going on ?

Ledi : I'm leaving

Me : what , why ? Wait where are you going?

Ledi : I don't know , I'll see when I walk out of these gates

What's going on here ? Please don't tell me she broke up with Tyler

Me : clearly something is wrong here , did we maybe upset you somehow ?

Ledi : I just know not to force where I'm not wanted

Me : wait what....

Tyler : Princess leave

Yhoh ! He's standing by the door . I get up

Me : please don't go , let's talk about this

She says nothing

Me : at least see me before you leave

She nods , I walk out . As if I'd allow her to leave . I'm going to tell those guards to lock the gates

Ledi will not walk out of here , clearly something is wrong but we'll fix it

I already failed her twice I won't do it again

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I may look like I'm dramatic , just acting out
or I want attention

I'm here because of Tyler , and if he no
longer wants me why should I bother and
stay ?

The coldness towards me is just too much
and I can't take it anymore

Which is why it's best I just leave , I really
didn't deserve a man like him in the first
place

Maybe he's finally realised that , and he's
done . I just wish he can tell me

Now he's locked the door , took the key and he's gone in the bathroom

I'm done packing and I want to leave , if it means I'll stay on the streets so be it

I wait for a while and he doesn't come out , I end up going to check on him

He's taking a shower and I just can't help myself but lust all over his chiselled masculine body

He has his head pressed against the wall , his back is turned on me . The water just running all over his naked body

I don't know how gods are or how they look like , but when I see him naked like this

Always I can't help but say , he's a whole god definition

Me : Ty.....

He turns back and faces me , my eyes trail to his hard manhood . And it's all out

The temptation this man is , I swear I need deliverance . He holds his hand out to me

Can't he see I'm still dressed , he's losing his mind but I think I'm losing mine faster

Because I take his hand and get inside the shower , I'm just wearing a long tight body hugging strap sleep white dress

The second the water pours on me , it's all glued on my body . My breasts are just exposed

And as if he can read my mind , he holds both of them . I move closer to him , his dick is pressed against my lover tummy

Few inches away from just reaching my coochie , and I'm itching down there . I don't know if that's normal or what . He uses his thumbs to run my nipples , and they're so hard

Me : ahhh..

I bite my lower lip , why am I being a whore? But I'm loving this feeling right now

I cross my legs , there's something going on in my coochie , it's good in a way but scaring me

Tyler : you're horny

His mouth has no filter , he pulls my dress up all the way to my waist . And he just picks me up , I wrap my legs around his waist and my hands around his neck for balance

We lock eyes , he takes my lips into his and we kiss . He humps on me , and I let out slight moans in his mouth

He's just making me feel good , I don't want to lie I want him inside of me

He walks out with me still in his arms , and lays me down on the bed

He only pull out of the kiss , when he takes my wet dress off me and he's back at it again

His hands all over my body , like he's studying every curve . My imperfections and perfections

I only have on a wet lace panty , that he slowly takes out . In my mind I'm saying his name over and over again

I don't know if it's so I don't think it's anyone else about to do me bad or what

He plants kisses from my legs to my thighs to my coochie

My hands trail to his head , he parts my knees slowly taking his time

His could lips causes me to shiver , as he kisses my coochie lips over and over again

It's when he parts the lips with his cold tongue , I move back moaning

Me : ohhh

He brings me back down , his tongue does things inside of me down there

It's when he starts going in and out of my coochie with it , that I push his head even further in

His one hand is caressing the side of my ass, the other moves to my coochie and he rubs his thumb on my clit . I can't keep still , and in a way it's like I'm helping him . He punches my clit a bit

Me : ahhhhh

The crazy feeling to cross my legs again comes , but now I can't . I try to move back he pulls me back , he rubs viciously on my clit I can't help it

I let go my upper body shaking a bit , it's just crazy . I'm moving my legs like nobody's business

Me : Ohhhh my god Ty.....ahhhhh

I grab the sheets , and push his head off me. I finally get to cross my legs my toes even hurt from twirling them this much

He's just looking at me amused , like his face is pleased

After a few minutes I calm down panting a bit , that was pleasure . And I didn't even know about it

He comes up and just kisses me saying nothing , now I taste my coochie all over his lips

My legs cross over his back , and his hard dick is pressed on my stomach . I try to reach it

Tyler : no

He mumbles through the kiss , I ignore him

Tyler : what did I say ?

Me : but

Tyler : what did I say ?

Yhoh ! Life is a floor tile

Me : we won't have sex until we're in Cape
Town

Tyler : good

I feel like killing him

Tyler : study , you're writing the exams you missed tomorrow . It's going to be a long day for you

Me : they're allowing me to write ?

Tyler : yes

Wow okay , I wasn't expecting that at all

Tyler : I'm in love with you

Now I don't know , because I thought we were over . He was done with me

Tyler : I'm sorry I've been off , in two days we're leaving . We'll get to talk and hopefully you'll understand why I was the way I was

Me : should I be worried ?

Tyler : I don't know sweetheart , right now I don't want you stressed okay ?

I nod

He plants a soft kiss on my forehead

Me : I'm in love with you

Tyler : make me proud sweetheart

There's no way I'm failing , I got my chance
to do right again . I won't mess it up

- .
- .
- .

INSERT 31

Princess

I'm done with high school goodbye
everything and all

All the good memories and the bad ones ,
I'm happy I don't even want to lie

My last exam felt like a walk in a park ,
maybe it's because it was the last one

I can't wait to see what Botswana holds for
me , as scared as I am I'm trying to stay
optimistic

I arrive at the palace , after writing
everyone was headed to Durban for a
celebration

It just didn't feel right for me , both my friend and brother are not there so I didn't want to

And it doesn't help with Zamo on my neck , asking me questions where is Soso and Prince

Apparently they seem to have disappeared on the same day , which I wasn't even aware of

So maybe just maybe they decided to run away together , so they can be an amazing little family away from us

Voice : hi

Such a hoarse voice , I turn back and lord
finish him . Where do we get his kind ?

Me : h...hi uhm hi yes hi

Oh lord now bury me what the hell ! And he
laughs at me

He's just finishing me himself

Me : who...who are you ?

Him : Sambulo I'm here for.....

Me : Tyler yes , he...said to expect you

Sambulo : well can I find him ?

Tyler took his woman to school today , the drama of that man is for days and days

Me : he's....in Durban

Sambulo : well I'll wait cause I can't leave

Me : yes don't leave

What the hell is wrong with me

Sambulo : well then I'm going nowhere

Me : don't....uhm okay can I get you something to drink ?

Sambulo : if you join me

Me : then let's

I lead the way he follows me and I can feel his eyes just feasting on me

.
. .
. .

Dikeledi

Imagine having to write 7 papers in one day, I'm dead tired I even feel like crying

All because of I'm tired nothing else , and I'm hopeful that I did good . On most of the papers

And a few of them were changed somehow, so there was no way for me to write the same paper as everyone who has written

Surely to avoid me getting answers from the others or even some scope . If only they knew , I'm like a leper no one was going to show me or tell me anything

Tyler : and here she is

He says as soon as I get to him , I can't believe he waited from morning until now and it's noon

I just hold him because I want to sulk , and he has to let me sulk . He hugs me back

Tyler : you did it ?

I nod , and the tears . I want to cry so I won't even hold them

Tyler : I'm sorry alright , but it had to be done right ?

Me : yeah

I pull out he wipes my tears

Tyler : I got you food

Me : why didn't you say so

I open the door getting in the car , and reaching the bag . And it's just my favourite, beef burger and a vanilla milkshake

I eat , he gets in and drives while I eat . He keeps taking glances at me from time to time

Tyler : what lady finishes a burger in 3 minutes ?

Me : who's counting ?

He chuckles , he must just let me be . This was so not my favourite day like most that have passed . I need this food and sulking and crying for no reason

.

.

.

Tyler

Finding Sambulo and my sister was not pleasing at all

Mind you I know Sambulo he can keep to himself , Princess is still a child and she's clueless

The way she was looking at him , she just wasn't herself . And that's what I didn't like

I don't even need to have a talk with Sambulo , but I need to reprimand my sister

Sambulo will fuck her and pass like nothing ever even happened

Me : sweetheart please start packing ,
tomorrow we're leaving

She's on the bed laying like she's a corpse

Me : sweetheart

Okay fine , she wants to play this way this is
what we'll do

I give her a peck and walk out , meeting
with Sambulo it's already dark

Sambulo : as cute as it was , I really didn't
appreciate a high school kid having a crush
on me

Me : that's my sister , watch yourself

Sambulo : now you remind me , I don't even know why I came back here right after you tried to kill me

Me : tried ? Don't insult me . If I wanted you dead you'd be dead

Sambulo : okay let's stop right there , why am I here ?

Me : I'm going to the woods , I need you there

Sambulo : I'm tired seeing you kill people

Me : and I'm not planning to kill this one ,
that's why I need you to tame me

Sambulo : you tried to kill me

Me : Sambulo don't piss me off

He sighs

Sambulo : this is not fair

Life is not fair , and he's about to see
exactly just how not fair it is

·
·

Prince

I couldn't stay there , as much as I wanted to stay and try to fix things with my family I just couldn't

I tried running , but where was I going to go? I couldn't even take my cars and go to a hotel or something

Because the second everyone saw I left , my father was just going to block those cards

The past few days I've been in the woods ,
stupid of me I know

But I think we've gathered and figured that
all out before that I'm stupid

I haven't bathed nor eaten , I wonder just
how long I can keep up with this

Footsteps scare the shit out of me , Tyler
messed up with me

I get up and try to hide by a tree only I'm
met by the same golden thingy that teared
people apart right in front of me

Me : Ty....please , please don't hurt me

And he's not alone , but with one of his friends that's if they're friends as such

I think his name is Sambulo or something , I've met him once or twice

Sambulo : your own brother

Tyler : this boy needs to learn

Before I can even utter anything out , he has me by my neck .

Me : Ty....

He tightens his grip , and before I know it I'm thrown around like a piece of paper .

I land right on a tree , with my back falling down

.

.

.

Sambulo

This boy is weak , physically and emotionally . His body can't take this

And he's just being thrown around , all over these trees like he's nothing

My heart bleeds and goes out for him , and to think his own brother is doing this to him

Me : come on , that's enough

He gives me that I won't kill him look , but damn the way he's throwing him around

It's either this boy will be paralysed , or live with a broken body for his entire life . I can't believe I'm here to watch all this , what does this say about me ? I guess I'm one mental case like the rest of them

He starts coughing blood , and it's only normal he would . Being thrown on the trees did him bad

Prince : Ty ple...ase

Poor boy , but it's like he's upsetting Tyler who goes off at him with fists and kicks

Me : I can't take this anymore

He's picked roughly from the ground , and thrown around only he changes into one disturbing black furry animal , with wings that go on for days

Me : fuck no

He growls right at his brother , who is chilled as always .

I tell you this right now , he's not sacred of his fury brother . And the two face each other

Me : you two are not about to do this shit in front of me

I'm human , let's bare that in mind . And curse is this on these people

Me : I'm gone

I say with my hands up in surrender

Tyler : we're done , he's good

The fury brother , moves back slowly . And
Tyler changes back to his form

Tyler : I just needed to unleash him , let's go

After beating his own brother like that , it's
like nothing to him

.

.

.

INSERT 32

Prince

I look and feel like shit , Tyler doesn't play
and I've learnt the hard way

I'm to never and I mean never ever mess
with him or Ledi ever again

I saw him kill two people in front of me ,
and now he's beaten me up to a pulp . Yes it
helped me unleash the alter ego , I found
my strength

I just need to work on finding my balance ,
learn how to be who I'm meant to be
without being pushed like that

I don't even know how I found way back
home , but here I am in my chamber on my
bed . I don't want to face anyone right now,
I know I messed a lot

With my parents and school as well , exams
are done and there's no way I'm going to
get another chance to write now

I have to wait until next year , but I'm
willing to do that . I've already disappointed
everyone

And it's now time to redeem myself , I
won't mess it up

The door opens and Tyler walks in , I know I
should be terrified right now but I'm not

Tyler : you're really a Manzini

Me : and....you doubted that

Tyler : boy you made stupid decisions , you
had me worried . And don't ever do that
shit ever again

Me : got it

Tyler : fucking get yourself in check

Me : I will , now please don't tell anyone I'm here . When I've healed I'll see them , and make things right

Tyler : suit yourself , I'm leaving . And I hope to not be back here ever again because of you

I've had enough of him , I won't mind not seeing him for quite a while

He walks out , I lay back down . I'll be locked up in here the whole weekend

.

Princess

I'm sad , like really sad . I'm so going to miss my friend , I wish she wasn't going but then, Tyler over everything

Me : don't go

She giggles

Me : I'm serious

Ledi : you remind me of how I am when Ty has to leave

Me : I'm going to miss you

Ledi : and you're going to Botswana in a few days

Me : wouldn't it have been great if you came with ?

And I've just thought of that right now

Ledi : I'll come visit , how's that ?

Me : better than nothing

Ledi : bunny I love you

Me : and I love you , please don't replace me

Ledi : I wouldn't even think of that

Me : okay

We hug , and I don't want to let go . I even lied to my parents about where she's going

I didn't want them to think anyhow , hearing that she's going to Cape Town with Tyler . They might say Tyler is taking her to be with him all alone and all that

As much as they know about their relationship , parents are still parents

And they might just blow this whole thing out of proportion

Me : take care of yourself

Ledi : always , and you do the same

I nod

Me : if you want me to come fetch you , I'm just a phone call away

Ledi : perfect

I leave her , she gets in the car . On my way to my chamber I bump into Sambulo

Sambulo : you're sad ?

Me : you're leaving

He smiles , and I need some help from above . A little saving from him , won't hurt and that's all I need right now

Sambulo : but it's not like you won't see me again

I'm an idiot

Me : oh no , I meant that as a question

I'm lying

Me : not that I'm sad because you're leaving

He laughs a bit , and the feelings in my stomach . They make me wanna flip over and over

Sambulo : keep well , I'll see you soon

He walks past me , and now I'm really sad . They're all gone . This is not fair at all

.

Dikeledi

I'm tired , the trip here worn me out . All I need is a shower and bed

Tyler : you okay ?

I just nod , I don't even have the energy to admire this beautiful house

And it looks beautiful , not go mention too clean . You'll swear no one lives here

Tyler : you look tired

Me : I am , and I just need to sleep

Tyler : go shower first , I join you in a few . I have a few things to attend to

Me : okay , where do I go

Tyler : the last second room on the second floor

I stare at these stairs that seem like they'll take the last energy I have left

Tyler : I'm not carrying you up these stairs

Me : but....

Tyler : no

Me : please

He ignores me and gets busy on his phone

Me : I'm not going up there with my feet

He just looks at me and says nothing , I also sit down on the first stair

Tyler : you're really going to be this dramatic ?

I give him taste of his own medicine , I say
nothing and balance myself

Tyler : you fall asleep there , and I'm going
to leave you there

Me : at least it's not the streets

The eye he gives me , but it doesn't matter .
I'm going carrying myself up there either

.

.

.

Tyler

Women will always be women , she really fell asleep there on the stairs

And of course I wasn't going to leave her there like that , that's my baby y'all

I couldn't just let her sleep like that , so yeah we all know how that ended like

With me carrying her gorgeous sexy self up the stairs to our room

And the whole night , she has me locked to herself with her legs . As if I was going to run away from her , in the middle of the night

Ledi : good morning

I look at her , her face is funny . She wants to laugh , all because she's here in bed

And she knows very well she didn't carry herself . So her word won and I lost

Me : must be nice being you

Ledi : you're not being nice

Me : oh

Ledi : I said good morning

Me : the only good thing about it , is that
you're right here next to me in my arms

She smiles , I lean closer and we kiss . She's
a bit hesitant at first

And it's the morning breath thing she
always nags me about , but she knows I
don't care about that

Her stomach growls and she pulls out of the
kiss , making those puppy eyes that don't
ever work on me

Ledi : I'm starving

I just stare at her

Ledi : I swear my intestines are intertwining

Okay I give up

Me : let's go shower , but we're going out

Ledi : must we ?

Me : mhm

We get up and take a shower together , one innocent shower with kisses here and there. She wears a long strap sleeve summer dress

with flip flops , I see this is her style just
simplicity but she always flexes

Me : you're beautiful

She looks at me and smiles

Ledi : thank you

She walks to me , and does the unexpected.
A whole forehead kiss to me

Me : when I become a yes mam man , don't
you dare leave me

She laughs , I take her hand and we walk down

Ledi : these stairs are tiring though

Me : get used to them

I have a lot of things I want to talk to my woman about , and us going out this morning would give us a chance to talk about a bit of those

The rest , I'll see in the coming days . We don't have much time together but just two months . Unless she agrees to what I'm about to ask her , then I'll get to keep her with me

And in these two months , I want her to know me . Tyler the man that she moves , and also the inhuman side

As much as I'm scared a bit that she might reject me because of it

Now reality is about to stare me in the eye , and I'm even fearful to admit the fear I hold

.

.

.

Dikeledi

This place is beautiful , some chilled restaurant right by the coast

Giving one beautiful view to the ocean , and the breeze hits just perfect

Tyler : this is you eating ?

Tyler has a way to grill me while being so cute about it

Me : yes

So what if I'm not eating what is perceived as breakfast to everyone else

I'm not a fan of these breakfasts served at restaurants , and I can admit that

Tyler : I want you to move here

And then a boom , right out of nowhere .
There's no preparation like nothing

Me : what if I choked and died ?

Tyler : you didn't

Me : and I said what if ?

Tyler : doesn't matter , you didn't so ?

Me : so it was going to be okay ?

Tyler : sweetheart

I put the fork down , and we have a few minutes of silence

I'm hoping he'll say I was kidding , I just wanted to get a reaction out of you

But nothing , he's really serious about this .
Makes me wonder how long he's been thinking about it

Me : I got here yesterday

He says nothing

Me : and already you want me to move here ?

Tyler : you got admitted at UCT

What ? How does he know that because I didn't even tell Princess

Me : who told you that ?

Tyler : why ask ? Because you did not tell me

Me : I didn't tell anyone

Tyler : and I'm not just anyone

I hate to go back there again , because when I got those news's . I got deal by Soso and Enhle . I didn't get that chance to rejoice and be happy , about being accepted

Me : and I got admitted at Wits

Tyler : I should be offended that you still know about that

I am being tested , and I tell you this . He couldn't have chosen the perfect place to do so

When I'm in Cape Town with him , and I only know him here

And he knows I can't just get up and walk away

Me : even if I choose UCT , I'll be at school staying at res

Tyler : and why ?

Me : because that's what the funding aid will be paying for , and your mother is against this us living together in cohabitation

Tyler : do you see her here ?

He must not

Me : I'm not about to go rebellious

Tyler : I don't remember saying anything
when she was cohabitating with my father

That has nothing to do with me

Me : still

Tyler : I told you this first hand , I'm
marrying you as soon as you're done with
healing process . You're trying but you're

not there yet . So marriage right now is not here yet , but I want you with me

There's something about Tyler that says I want to play hero

But I appreciate that he's doing it accompanied by love , otherwise I would just see it as pity and nothing else

Me : you just said this time , can I think it through ? And it's not because maybe I don't see us living together . There's still things you said you want to tell me , and I'm scared of whatever that is . What if they happen to influence my decision in another direction what then ?

Tyler : I'll see to it that we talk tomorrow ,
so you can make your decision fast

Me : now you're just going to hurry me ?

Tyler : no , it's because I want you here

One thing is pretty clear about this

Me : so you thought this through for a while
right ?

Tyler : the first time we talked about you
coming here

And I believe that

Me : and you didn't think to include me in that ?

Tyler : so you could have rejected it before you even got here ? No ways . And what if you would have said no to even coming altogether ?

Okay now I get it , that give him a slight fear

Tyler : I'm not saying stay by force , I just want you to know where I am and decide if you're with me or what

Tell me why I shouldn't take his black card and take myself for some retail therapy ?
After all this he's just sprung on me

INSERT 33

Princess

I need some serious help right now , Ledi is gone and I'm left all alone . Like there's not even one person my age to talk to

Azania just stares at me like I'm talking Afrikaans with her , and it's not cute

I so want to know what's the story with that beard cappuccino man . Too bad I'm leaving, I guess his see you soon won't happen anytime soon

It might not even happen like ever , love at first sight and boom in a few days it's gone

I still say life is not fair , surely he's older . But there's Ledi and Tyler all happy and loving . Maybe Sambulo was so going to be my happy loving as well , but now Argh it's not happening

Voice : what's occupying your thoughts ?

He doesn't want to know

Me : a lot my king

Dad : want to share ?

With him ? No ways

Me : it'll pass

Dad : I see , are you ready for Botswana ?

Me : maybe

After all I've made peace and I think it'll do me some good

It's the duties as responsibilities I'm worried and concerned about a bit

And it's been quite a while since we last went to Botswana

Dad : you're going to be okay , I don't doubt that

Me : thank you my king

As much as they say I should worry about

making myself proud , I can't help but want to make them proud . My father and mother are the best king and queen I know

I don't even want to compare them to my uncle and aunt , on their own they're just the best

I hope to be half of what they are , if not to that full potential

Me : still no word on Prince ?

Dad : nothing as of yet , but something tells me he's not far

Okay at least I'm not crazy

Me : same here , and now I know he's okay where he is

Dad : I just wish your mother would stop worrying

Me : she's just being a mother my king

He shakes his head , now I don't know what's the meaning of that

But at the end of the day we're all worried about Prince . And it didn't help that Tyler left , right after he said he will find him

Now we just have to hope that he will come back home

Dad : it turned out that the body parts found in the veld belonged to his baby mama and one other girl

Me : no !

The shock , so it wasn't even one but two

Dad : yeah the results came back , and the families informed me

This is sad , I didn't like Soso I won't even lie.

But no human being deserves to lose their lives like that

Me : but what happened to them , do we know ?

Dad : unfortunately not

Me : wow , I don't even know what to say

Dad : such is life , and as queen you'll see all this maybe even worse . Don't let them be your end , hold your head up high at all times . Even when you're at your lowest , and a queen cries not in front of her people. When they're at their weakest , you be strong for them . When you're at your

weakest , you be strong for yourself . They'll stand behind you always

Now that's some great advice from the king himself

I don't even know what to say , because I expected my mother to be the one giving me some words of wisdom

This right here I appreciate more than my own words could ever even express

.

.

.

Dikeledi

You'd think I'm out and about in Cape Town, but no after that breakfast

I was left with no words in me , absolutely nothing . And all day nothing has been on my mind

Except what he said , I almost even called Princess and told her

Then I remembered that no , we don't discuss her brother and I'm not about to start right now

Tyler : come here

He says walking in from outside , he holds his hand out . And by the look of things we're going upstairs

Me : are you going to carry me ?

Tyler : Sweetheart no , and don't pull that yesterday stunt again

I want to laugh , I end up just giggling

Tyler : the first and last time I fall in love

He picks me up , I wrap my legs around his waist my hands on his neck

Tyler : give me a kiss

He lifts his head I lean down and we kiss .
The nerve to walk with me on the stairs
kissing

No ways this is not the movies , I try to pull
out he bites my lower lip . Pulling me into
one deep kiss

We get to the bedroom and this is some
small earth paradise I tell you

I don't even know when he got the time to
do this , there's scented candles
everywhere on the floor

Red and white roses , there's gift bags I
can't see obviously what's inside

And there's a pink Mrs human life size
teddy by the couch

Everything is just so beautiful , this is just
too romantic . That first date we had was
nothing compared to this

There's even a little cute picnic set , now
I'm starving

Tyler : I'd say let's go take a bath , let's have
something to eat . But I just want to have
you

Okay let's forget the food , this gives me a tingle but also that small fear

But there's a certain way that Tyler has when he holds my body

Am I not first to pull his t-shirt off , and he takes my lips into his

Placing me nicely on the bed , all over these roses . He pulls my dress off , not taking his eyes off mine

He trails soft kisses down my body and comes back to my neck , he causes me to just part my legs

And he gets in between them , my hands trail up and down his back . He takes his pants off , leaving just his briefs

This moment gets heated up , I have hot flushes everywhere on my body

He pulls my panty off slowly , his hands trail to my boobs he cups them . And they perfectly just fit into his hands

Tyler : sit up

Can he just not deprive me ? Like not again please . I sit up , legs parted still and his hands still on my boobs

Tyler : take my briefs off

Okay he's on his knees , so imagine where is dick is at ? Right on my face

But I do as told and take his briefs off , his dick just springs up . My eyes can't move away from it , this is scary but he won't hurt me right ?

He tilts my chin I look up , we lock eyes I can't make much of his look . It just keeps getting intense

Somehow my eyes find their way back to his dick , a clean man is everything . More especially when he smells good

Again he tilts my chin and we look at each other

Tyler : you good ?

Me : good

The voice , something has happened to it .
I'm like a 3 year old now

Tyler : what do you want ?

And I will seriously answer him

Me : I want you

Tyler : you do ?

Me : I do

Tyler : I'll let you have me

He lays me back down , it's not by force nor rushed . But a slight gentle push

He goes down , and I don't understand how he does this . Like this man's tongue can pleasure me

And he does it so delicate taking his time , like he's having one most special desert

I don't know what to do with myself , or where to touch . My hands are all over the place

Just when that feeling comes again , he lifts his head and he's not my favourite person right now at all . He's not taking his eyes off me , because I want to complain I look back at him

Tyler : it gets too much for you stop me

Me : I didn't want you to stop

It's when he moves up I see we're talking about two different things here

Tyler : stop me

I'm just too quick to nod , and he slowly rubs his dick on my coochie

I won't lie it's an amazing feeling , but when I close my eyes I can't help but tense up

.

.

.

Tyler

There's no way that she can be abused and be fine with intercourse where penetration takes place

Me : sweetheart look at me

She opens her eyes

Me : it's just me

She nods

Me : we can stop

Ledi : no

She hands both my arms

Me : there's no pressure

Ledi : I want this please

Me : okay

The second my dick makes contact with her open , she's back to tight eyes closed and the body is tense

I move back , she opens her eyes after a few seconds

Ledi : Ty..... I'm sorry

She wants to cry and no we're not doing this . I bring her up and hug her

Me : it's okay , I'm not rushing you now am I?

She shakes her head

Me : good , let's go eat and bath then sleep

Ledi : no please....let's try again

Me : sweetheart

She cups my face

Ledi : you love me right ?

Me : I don't know about that but I'm in love with you

Ledi : then let's try again

She's still going to tense up again , the weight of a man on top of her in this manner will trigger her

I lay down and flip her on top of me , she straddles me

Me : take it easy and don't hurt yourself

She looks at me puzzled

Me : go up a bit

At least she gets that one , she lifts her ass a bit and lays forward

Me : and don't close your eyes

I rub my dick on her slowly , when she's wet enough I slide it in slowly

Ledi : it....it hurts

I move out a bit

Me : give me a kiss

She brings her face and we kiss , I slide my dick back in and this time around she even goes down herself

It takes her quite some time to adjust , but as soon as she's fine she pulls out of the kiss

Me : you good ?

Ledi : all good

I thrust in slowly underneath her , she's in pain and quite for a while . When she starts getting a bit of pleasure she moves her hips, and I move my hands to her hips helping her

I did not expect her to be this comfortable
as soon as she finds pleasure

But the situation is different , she's in
control now and not being controlled

That's why she's okay being on top , than
having me on top of her

We will make love this way , until she's okay
with me being in charge

-
-
-

Dikeledi

I've been awake for a while now , my body is drained not that tired but I'm tired in a way

I don't know how I feel , I'm happy that we got to be intimate on that level

But I feel like I deprived him in a way , because on every round I was the one on top of him

Sure he got to cum and all , but I still feel like he missed out in way

Beats me why I feel this way , but I somehow just can't help it

I'm not facing him right now , he's holding me from behind . But I can tell he's awake

I don't feel okay , I don't know if this is how I should feel or what's wrong with me

He gets off the bed after some time

Tyler : you're bleeding

What ! I move the sheets off me as fast as I can and it's a mess okay

I'm bleeding , this is not some small little stain . It's like there like some red ball

Me : I'll....I'll

I don't even know what to say , okay I want to say I'm sorry and that I'll clean it up

But nothing is coming out , no words are coming out . I'm suddenly all mute

He walks to the bathroom and I'm still just so stuck on this bed

He comes back , and I'm even ashamed to look at him . Was sex supposed to make me bleed ?

Me : I'm...I'm sorry

He says nothing but removes the sheets and now I don't know what's going on in his mind

When he tries to take me , I tense up a bit but I want to move further from him . I'm scared though that I'll stain the sheets

He takes me into his arms , I've never felt this way this is an embarrassment . I've never bled , so why bleed now ?

He puts me inside one soothing bathtub , and walks out leaving me in here

And I cry , I don't know why I'm crying but I cry for a while and he catches me on it

Tyler : are you in pain ?

Okay he's worried and concerned , now I feel bad

Me : no

Tyler : sweetheart then why are you crying?

Me : I don't...know . I'm sorry I stained your sheets

He takes me out , smiling a bit . Now he's confusing me

Tyler : I don't have any sanitary towels in here , so I'll go out fast and get them okay ?

He's done drying me , I take the lotion and he ends up helping me

Tyler : you need anything else ?

I shake my head no , because I've never even needed sanitary towels before

.

.

.

INSERT 34

Tyler

Are all women like this ? Or its just this one of mine

She's laying on the floor right now , like completely down on the tiles

And mind you it's a bit chilly , one thing I know is that she's cold down there

Me : sweetheart

Ledi : mhm

Me : don't you want to come and lay on top of me ?

She shakes he head no

Me : but you'll catch a cold

Ledi : it's better

Me : there's nothing better about you getting sick

Ledi : no , the coldness from the floor makes the pain feel better

Now I don't know

Me : okay at least lay something underneath

Ledi : it's fine like this

This I can't take anymore , I take my phone and call my sister walking away from her

Princess : what a surprise

Me : I need your help

Princess : that's big a whole you needing help from me

Me : tell me something

Princess : yes

Me : when women get their period cycle ,
like how painful is it ? Is it normal for one to
have extreme pain and cramps as such ?

Princess : oh my word ! Did she...

Me : I asked you a question so answer me

Princess : yes , it happens to quite a lot of
women

Me : okay so it doesn't mean something is wrong ?

Princess : no absolutely not

Me : okay

Princess : just get her some pain pills , she'll be fine

Me : alright thanks

Princess : I'll send you a list of the pills I take, they're quite strong she'll be fine

Me : now having is sister is being useful for me

Princess : wow like all along....

Me : I love you , send that list

She laughs I drop the call , I can relax now right ? Because I was really starting to get worried , we had sex no protection was used

The possibility of getting her pregnant , that's what I feared . Now I can't even get her on the pill or injection , how am I going to explain wanting her to be safe like that ?

Because I already said I'm infertile , now I don't know how I'm going to make sure she doesn't fall pregnant

Because if she does , I doubt she'll understand why she would have to abort that thing

I walk back to the room , and she's still on the floor . Women go through the most

I'm just asking myself though is it necessary for them to experience such pains , just because it's that time of the month ?

Me : sweetheart

She look at me

Me : please get off the floor

She shakes her head and looks the other way . I feel like I have a 3 year old in this house

Just saying

This is how I'm spending the 16th of December , indoors watching my 3 year old sulking baby

And I blame mother nature for all this

.

Princess

Who doesn't have social media in this day and age ?

Or are my investigative ways not elevated enough or what ?

I have been everywhere looking for Sambulo , but he's nowhere to be found . I just wanted to stalk him , nothing much . Just to see about his life and such things

But I can't find him , I'm really disappointed.
I really should forget this guy , I'll be never
see him again . Or any time soon for that
matter

A whole commotion outside causes me to
go out , and I can't believe my eyes

Me : Prince

He's changed completely , he doesn't even
look like himself . He's got slight muscles ,
it's like he grew a few years older

Prince : wele (twin)

Even the voice has changed slightly , I get closer and hug him . I've never felt such a cold hug from my brother before . He doesn't even return it as a hug but as a pat on my back

Me : oh okay

And he just looks at me as I pull out . What happened to my brother ? This is not the Prince I know , he's like a mini Africa . I can't say Tyler because then he would be worse than this

Prince : my king I know I shamed you , and I messed up . But I've come back to rectify my faults , and try to do better

Dad : you don't need to go to such extreme measures of having to feel pain , before you can unleash yourself . Learn that

Prince nods , we called him weak he left and now he's back a former shadow of himself

Something tells me , he's no longer the boy he left as

Mom : I'm glad you're home baby

Prince : I apologize for all this my queen

Mom : it's okay , you're back home safe

that's all that matters

True that , but I can't help and wonder .
What happened to my brother ?

-
-
-

Tyler

Princess came through with those pills , I
ran around looking for them until I did

And I must say they worked wonders ,
because now everything is all good

So all it takes its just three days of
moodiness , insane cravings

The pain and cramps , sulking and always
wanting me next to her all the time

I disappear for two minutes she'll shout my
name all the way from downstairs or
upstairs

Yeah it's was tough , like really tough but
then we pulled through and here we are
now

I don't know if we have the strength to get through it every month or what

But we'll see , for now I am thanks . I want nothing it was enough , even if it was to not happen again I wouldn't mind

I'm on call with my mother , and she's not pleased with me . I really should be ashamed of myself

A whole queen not pleased with me , but I'm okay here . I'll still go back home and check on them

Mom : Christmas is meant to be spent and celebrated with family

Me : I know mommy

The laugh Ledi is holding in , and it's not nice . I'll always be mommy's boy

Mom : then young champ why are you not coming home ?

I laugh , I couldn't bare to hear her call me young champ at this age . Growing up she called me that everywhere , and it was cute and all . But I'm old now , I even have a beard

Mom : tell me you're coming home this week

Me : I can't

She sighs

Me : I'm sorry and I love you okay , and
you'll get your present . I'll send it

Mom : you're killing me but it's fine , just
know I'm not happy

Me : I'm sorry

Mom : give Ledi the phone

I tell you if I wasn't this chilled , I would be
dead by now

Mom : I know she's there Tyler I'm not a child , I didn't buy that lie story your sister spin at us

Great

Me : she's sleeping

Mom : don't be a liar

You can lie to anyone and everyone just not the mother right

Me : the queen wants to speak with you

I hand her the phone and she holds it for quite a while before she says anything

I walk to the kitchen leaving them to talk , I hope my mother doesn't start with her women empowerment speeches

My woman is okay now and back to herself, I want to make love to her even right now

I can't have her denying me , because she's been given some take precautions do that and that speeches

She walks in and she still looks fine

Me : what did she want?

Ledi : she asked me to cook for you on
Christmas day

Me : no ways

She nods handing me my phone back , I
take it

Me : can you cook ?

Ledi : I can , it's just that she wants to send
her own recipes . I wonder if I'll be able to
get those right

See how these two important women in my life are getting along , I pray and hope it doesn't change

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Cape Town has been okay for me , but I can't say much. Because having my cycle held me down a bit , but I'm all okay now

And we're out today doing shopping , for
the Christmas lunch tomorrow

I'm really going to cook for him , and only
because the queen asked me

And she did send that recipe , I hope it
doesn't turn into a disaster

Tyler : sweetheart , you know you still owe
me a talk

I'm not ready for that , I feel like Tyler is
going to break my heart with whatever he
wants to say

Me : I know

Tyler : can we get to it when we get home ?

Me : please give me a few more days

Tyler : but why ?

Me : because I'm not ready for that

Tyler : I need you to be ready , I'll let tomorrow pass only then

Wow , and tomorrow is just a few hours away

Me : I still have your bombshell to think about

Tyler : I was hoping you'll say you're done thinking about it

Me : I am not

I have thought about it , and to be honest I'm considering it

Already I'm alone , going back to Manzini is no option for me . Princess is leaving soon

Who am I going back to ? And I don't want to go to Joburg and have to start over

As much as that is good , I just don't think it's for me . Having to start from scratch

Me : I do want to stay here

I say it so casual like nothing , and he stops pushing the trolley he looks at me

Tyler : tell me you're moving in with me sweetheart , that's how it's done

I laugh and he smiles for a second , and it reminds me of he laughs when he was talking to his mother yesterday . She must really be something special , to have that kind of effect on her son

Me : I'm moving in with you

Tyler : that's perfect and you won't regret it

I hope I don't

.

.

.

INSERT 35

TWO WEEKS LATER

Prince

The holidays didn't even feel like holidays to me , only because I was always at the woods most nights

I'm still struggling I won't lie , the wings hurt me so bad when they come out

I don't know if I'll ever get used to this pain, if there was a way I could unleash myself without opening the wings out

I would do it , because this one is taking a toll on me and I can't take it

But I'm trying to be strong as man up , I'll take it one step at a time

And hopefully I'll get there , schools are re-opening in a week

And I've gone back and registered to write my matric , call it luck or whatever

But they said I can write the exams I missed, and be done . So in February I'll be able to go to varsity

I've managed to make peace with a lot of things , like I was an idiot

I was so used by a girl and I allowed that to happen , not only being an idiot but I was also a coward

I've had some eye wakening , and it shouldn't even hurt the way Tyler killed Soso

Along with my seed in her womb , tearing them apart like that . I taught myself to see everything from his point . And I now understand that you never mess with a men's heart . That's what Ledi is to Tyler

I crossed the line , and I'm grateful he saved me . And I still have my life

Which is why I'm not willing to waste it anymore , I'll make the best of it

Voice : Manzini

Me : my king

Dad : going hunting alone again ?

Me : no , just going for some air

Dad : let's go

I don't think he understands me

Me : to the woods

Dad : yes let's go

No ways he's going in there with me , but I follow him anyways

Dad : don't worry I don't intend to hurt you or anything like that

Is that supposed to make me feel better ?
I'm always alone in there , with no one to see me that way

.

Dikeledi

Something is seriously wrong with me , I don't know what but I'm not myself at all

Maybe it's some kind of a sickness , I can't certainly say it's Cape Town's weather

I've been here all of December and I was fine , it's only now in January I feel this way

But besides it all have been good , Tyler is just the best and one hella romantic men

I think deciding to stay here wasn't that bad after all , and he makes it all so simple

I got admitted at UCT , and yeah I'm missing out on that accommodation pay-out

Because Tyler said no to moving to Res , so I'll be staying with him . Doing the cohabitating that the queen is so against

But it's working out so fine , I guess I have nothing to worry about . My phone rings and it's my bunny , to think she's leaving today and I won't even see her

Me : bunny

Princess : I'm so sad

Me : makes two of us

Princess : I can't believe I'm leaving and
won't be seeing you

Me : I know right

Princess : but are you still okay there ?

And this man walks in , I can't help but
smile just looking at him

Me : yeah I'm okay , couldn't be better

She laughs

Princess : of course , I'm happy for you .
And I hope you'll come visit me soon

Me : definitely , I will come no matter what

The eye I get , and the way he gets so
jealous he comes and kisses me

Me : stop....

Princess : wait are you guys.....okay that's
disturbing

Tyler : tell her goodbye

I laugh , his hand goes down to my thighs .
And the intimate has been great this side

Slowly I'm getting there

Me : bunny I love you okay

Princess : I so hate Tyler right now , and
please don't make any babies

She drops the call , I'm laid down on the
bed . I'm wearing nothing but his t-shirt

Tyler : I found out that your mother left you
some money , a house and a car

He says getting on top of me , and I don't think I'm hearing him well

Tyler : I've arranged for you to meet with the lawyer , but he's out of the country at the moment . But he'll send the documents later on , you just have to sign them so you can get your things . I said he can email them to me , if you don't mind

He tries to kiss me but I push him off

Me : what ?

Tyler : you heard me right ?

Me : yes , but that can't be true

Tyler : and why not ?

Me : because there's no way my mother could have left me a house , a car or money for that matter

Tyler : oh and why ?

Me : we lived from hand to mouth Ty , it's just not possible

Tyler : so that fool killed your mother for nothing ?

And then it's hits me , her very own words
that day at the river

Me : but how ?

Tyler : Sweetheart I don't know , but all I
know right now is that I want to make love
to you . Please allow me

Me : you don't even have to ask

He gets on his knees , taking the t-shirt I'm
wearing off . He trails down kisses

Parts my knees as he takes his briefs off , he
brings me down a bit

As he slides his dick inside slowly , I've adjusted to his length and thickness

It only hurts in the beginning, after all I'm all fine . He takes slow deep thrusts . And I do feel like something is wrong with me , and I don't want to say is the sex

Because even when we're not having sex I do feel some kind of a way , more especially on my lower stomach

Tyler : sweetheart are you okay ?

I nod , and then it brings me back . I did not tense today nor did I even panic

And he's on top , okay not exactly but he's in charge . This might just work

I smile , okay I'm happy . And I lock my legs behind his ass . He chuckles pounding in a bit harder

As he pounds harder and deeper , the feeling of pleasure intensifies . I try to let go, unlocking my legs

But he holds me , I don't get why he must just tire me on the first round with pleasure

And how does he do it to get this painful and amazing at the same time

Sambulo

I had to leave ever since coming back from Manzini , so the whole festive season I wasn't here

The families were getting really unsettled , and Tyler sent me away to assure them that we still have the upper hand with the cartel

Especially after the guns were taken , and later finding out the cartel took them

But all is well now , the cartel is quite so the families are relaxed a but

And it's back to business as usual , for them that is

Jase : did you have to come back ?

I chuckle , he says as I pull a chair and sit down

Me : and you're back from the dead . You surely missed dead by an inch

Jase : right

Me : everything in order ?

Jase : yeah , and Oceans wants to see us tomorrow

Me : why ?

Jase : I don't ask questions , you should learn not to as well

I can never , I question Tyler as much as I want

Jase : we have an order for meat

Me : he's back to that again ?

He nods

Me : what happened to the blood ?

He shakes his head

Jase : well

Me : I preferred him drinking blood , not eating the raw meat

Jase : makes all of us , but yeah we have to get on with it

Me : and damn I had to come back to this

He shrugs his shoulders

.

.

.

Princess

It was bitter sweet leaving home , it's been a day and already I miss my family like crazy

Not to mention my little sister , I miss that beautiful young person . She used to make my days I don't want to lie

Everyone welcomed me so nice I don't want to lie , it was really nice

The village came to the palace , it was beautiful . And even the family is nice towards me

There are some few people of course who are a bit sceptical , that they'll have a child as a queen

But my father told me to take heart , and that's what I'll do . I'll prove to then that I was born for this

It's just a bit sad that I'm all alone , Prince is going through his own things back at home

That's why he couldn't come with , but I understand .

I'm hoping Botswana has good things for me , maybe I'll even find love

Even though my heart still longs for Sambulo , yeah that guy . I don't think I'll forget him anytime soon

But I don't see how I'll ever get to see him again , so maybe I should forget him

But for now , it's all about settling fine and preparing for the crowning ceremony that's to take place in two weeks

That's when I'll see everyone I left back home , I'm hoping Ledi comes along with Tyler

.

.

.

INSERT 36

Dikeledi

Tyler was really serious about the whole things my mother left me

It still doesn't make sense to me , how she could ha been able to do this

We suffered , I know that suffering better than anyone else . So how would she have left all those ?

And not just a simple house , but a whole double storey house in Hillcrest

The car is an M6 , and the money is half a million rand . No wonder Thato killed her , it means he knew about all this

How it beats me , but seems like my mother was just secretive . I don't know how Tyler managed to find all this out

But I'm thankful in a way , if only I found out and knew all this before everything happened

Before I moved in with Thato and Rose , none of the things that happened to me would have happened

I would have just gone and stayed in my house , started my whole life there all alone

In a way now I'm starting to blame my mother , why didn't she just tell me ?

I don't understand why she kept all this from me , but I know she had her reasons and maybe I wouldn't even understand them

Tyler : stop thinking too much , let's go out

The way he loves going out , it beats me what kind of a man he is . The outdoors always do him good

Me : where are we going ?

Tyler : Camps Bay , there's a new steak house that's opened I want us to go there

Me : I'll never say no to food

He helps me put on my shoes and we leave

Tyler : you know Princess misses you so much

Me : and I miss her too

Tyler : she'll be crowned queen in two weeks

Me : and I'm not missing that right ?

He chuckles

Tyler : you have your own monies , so you make your own decisions

Me : that's also fine , because I have your back card

Tyler : please help me and bring it back

He's not getting it back , until I go back to KZN and see my house

I'll decorate there first if I'm not pleased , then and only then will he get his card back

We arrive at Camps Bay , and the restaurant it's top notch

And those are his places , you'll never find
Tyler at wimpy it those kind of restaurants

We get a table and sit down

Me : so we're just eating meat ?

He nods

Me : wow

Tyler : it's a steak house

That sounds somewhat creepy in a way ,
steak house . It's like something that's
illegal as dodgy

I order and when he orders he leaves me speechless , a whole steak that rare

He did not even say medium rare , he said rare

Me : what ?

He just looks at me

Me : please get him medium rare

Clearly he doesn't want one that's well done , but rare what nonsense is that ?

The waitress bids and leaves

Me : is everything okay with you ?

Tyler : yeah why ?

Me : why would you want to eat raw meat ?

That unsettles him a bit , but he's Tyler so he's hid it very well . But I got to catch on it

Our food arrives , and the way he's looking at his stake he's so disgusted and he ends up not eating it

Me : sorry I changed your order now you're not even eating

Tyler : don't sweat it

Poor man , he's really disgusted

Me : okay let's just leave or order what you wanted then

He takes my hand

.

.

.

Tyler

I wanted a rare stake for a reason , and it's not like I said I want a raw one . Women are just dramatic , and this one of me was just exaggerating

Me : no it's fine , finish up

I don't let go of her hand , and keeps eating.
Now I just want to leave

But I'll let her finish first , I won't be rush her . She doesn't know about this

And I think it's time now we talk , I've given her enough time . The whole if December and the first week of this month

I can't delay this any further , so tomorrow we have to talk

Voice : it's not nice seeing you again

Shit not his ass self

Me : Khoza , is this some police harassment?

Khoza : not at all , but you had two months to get back to me

Me : oh

Khoza : you know Oceans I can still take you in , for all the things you've done

Me : the do it , sweetheart let's go

She's confused now , clearly she can see this is cop . One that's busy talking about arresting me

Khoza : don't say I didn't warn you

Me : right

We walk out

Me : I'm sorry about that

Ledi : need I worry ?

Me : no sweetheart , I'll deal with it and it's nothing serious

I kiss her forehead

Me : okay ?

Ledi : yeah

We get inside the car , Khoza is starting to annoy me now

Maybe I should just finish off with him

Sambulo

The meat order arrived , and it's quite enough to sustain him for a while

With that out of the way , and the clubs and restaurants the families requested are underway

I have slight time on my hands , which is why I've decided to visit my parents today

They reside in PE , they moved down here after retiring

Mom : we don't know you anymore

Me : mom please , how can you not know your own son

She laughs , I'm just trying to throw her off . I know exactly what she means

I haven't come home in a while , and it makes me feel bad in a way . They're old now , and I have no other sibling . I'm the only child , I really should start doing better

They raised me like their very own flesh blood , I should be the child they raised.
And not this idiot that I am right now

Me : where's dad ?

Mom : somewhere in this house

Me : okay , how have you guys been ?

Mom : my health is really deteriorating

Me : what ?

And she sits down

Me : what do you mean ? Mom are you sick?

Mom : it's been a while now

Me : what ! Why didn't you tell me ?

Mom : I didn't want to worry you son

Me : no !

I raise my voice a bit , I am taking blame in all this . Had I been home more often , I would have known . But they should have told me as well , I would have been sooner

Me : what's wrong ?

She keeps quite

Me : mom

She tears up , and now I don't know what to do anymore . I get up and hug her

Me : it's going to be okay

I don't even believe those words , and her shaking her head tells me she's not going to be okay and she knows it

Mom : it's brain cancer

I pull out of the hug , and now I want to sink down on this floor and cry my lungs out

Mom : it's at the last stage , doctors say there's nothing they can do about it

Life can't be this unfair to me , my very own mother left me in a hospital . Few hours after being born

And now the only mother I know is being taken away from me in the most cruel way , why ?

Mom : I'm sorry son

I grab my car keys and get into my car . I
drive out not knowing where I'm going

With my phone ringing off the hook , and
it's my mother . I can't do this right now

And I end up in one of the club's here , I'll
get drunk and forget for a few minutes it's
fine

Because I don't want to think about this ,
I'm not ready to bury my mother yet

And what's going to happen to my father ?
That man can't live without this woman

.

Prince

Now my father has become my buddy for a few hours always late in the afternoons at the woods

I'm no match for him , nor can I even overcome his strength

But he's really helping me , and now that I'm with him everyday

I see that I need to be trained , that on my own I can't do this . Hence I'm accepting the help from him

And if I might say , he's better at this than Tyler . He doesn't fight me , but he lets me change and we challenge each other in that way

I'm sure Tyler was just going to beat the shit out of me , and then leave me like that

I'm so ready for school , I might be writing different paper . But I still have to attend until March . Then the March results will determine if I pass or not , so I'm prepared for that

The house is no longer the same without
Princess , I miss her so much

That's why after exams I hope to go see her
a bit maybe for a month or so

I go to varsity sometime June , I'll be so
behind and my years won't sense at all

But I want to get back to where we were
with my sister , I want us to be what we
used to be

And I know I'm the one who ruined
everything , so it's all up to me to fix it again

But Azania and I , we're getting along just fine . I can't wait until she's ready to walk and talk

Because now she's like a none existent being , all she does it eat and sleep . Cry and speak a language only she understands

And my sister is a attention seeker , like when she's busy uttering whatever she wants to be paid attention to

But how do you do that when you don't even understand ? And not only pay attention but respond back . If you're quite she cries , I'm dealing with a lot . And all this caused by a 2 months old baby

Mom : what happened to your cheek ?

I have one scratch it's a bit bad , considering that I bled for a while

Me : I scratched myself

Mom : with what ?

I look at her confused

Mom : considering that your cheek is swollen

Me : oh that

Mom : yes that Prince

Me : well it....

A knock at the door disturbs us and it's
Zamo . I've never been so happy to see him

Mom : come in Zamo

Zamo : my queen

Mom : I'll leave you boys

Me : we.... We're actually going out

Mom : no alcohol Prince

Me : yes my queen

I get up and we walk out , I go to my chamber and get a jacket

Zamo : your mother though

I laugh

Me : she knows the things we get up to , it's not a secret

Zamo : she scares me

Me : that makes me and you and everyone else

We leave taking a taxi to Durban

Zamo : how are you though boy ?

Me : I'm okay man , I've made peace with everything and yeah I'm getting there

Zamo : I'm sorry for what it's worth

Me : yeah me too

I stayed away from everyone in the village ,

because of the way everyone started looking at me . After they found out the bodies were that of Soso and Enhle

Already people knew about the marriage and the child , because she just couldn't keep her mouth shut

Zamo : but you seem better

Me : I'm getting my life back boy

Zamo : that's good

It sure is , I can't mope around over what I can't change . And this is one of those

Life has to continue

-
-
-

INSERT 37

Tyler

I woke up early this morning and went to meet with the guys

It's good to see Jase all up in his feet again ,
even though it took him so long to get up

But he's here and it's all good , I hope he's
learnt his lesson . Something I'll never say
to him ever

But he saved those two guys in the my
house that day , because I would have
feasted on them even on him

Me : where is Sambulo ?

Jase : home

Me : what ?

Jase : his parents home

Me : well someone tell him to get his ass
back here

Jase : he's dealing with a slight problem

Me : don't make me ask Jase

Jase : sounds like his mother is very much
sick , he's not taking it well

Crane : you mean he's drowning his sorrows
in alcohol , because he was drunk as hell
when he called you last night

Okay that can't be good , I understand the seriousness of the situation

But I can't have Sambulo going off the rails , not with Khoza back and behind me again

Me : you know what this means right ?

Crane nods

Me : you'll take Jase's post while he takes Sambulo's , so you're sticking around

Crane : alright

I turn to walk away

Me : and someone get Khoza off my back

Jase : are we finally killing him ?

Me : that would be nice wouldn't it be ? But he dies and all these idiots in his department come after me , and they'll just ruin my reputation . Because unlike him they're really idiots , they won't keep anything to himself

Jase : so what do we do ?

Me : must I do your job for you Jase ? Give him something else to chase and focus on , as long as it's not me

He nods , I walk out getting into my car . I
wanted to feed , but I have one damning
conversation awaiting me at home

I need to be in my sane mind

I take my phone and call Sambulo , at least
he's still capable to answer my calls at first
ring

Me : I heard

He sighs

Sambulo : yeah it is what it is

Me : exactly , and drowning yourself in the bottle is not the way to go

Sambulo : I....

Me : I'm talking and you shut up

He goes quite

Me : I won't even pretend how it feels to lose a parent because I don't even know , mine was killed right after giving to me by my own father . So I don't know your situation , I don't even want to imagine how I'll feel knowing Royalty was dying . But right now you need to man up and face this, going to the bottle is not going to help anyone at all . Not you or her , get your act

together . You're busy getting drunk ,
instead of using this time and spending it
with your mother

I drop the call and I hope he heard me ,
because he's not a man for me to still beat
the shit out of him

.
.
.

Dikeledi

I haven't told Tyler that I'm not okay , he
loves to exaggerate . Next thing he'll be like
let's go to the doctor

I'm sure this is nothing that serious , but
except the slight movements in my stomach

Like there's something seriously moving
inside of me , and the crazy thing is that I
feel it

Voice : what are you doing ?

Okay I'm caught in front of the mirror ,
looking at my stomach . Because it's getting
big

And I don't even have a belly , but today it's
out here and anyone who knows me can
see there's something here

Me : nothing

I pull my t-shirt down

Tyler : that didn't look like nothing

Me : I think I hurt myself in the shower

Tyler : let me see

Me : no , there's nothing

Tyler : are you sure ?

I nod , but now I'm worried

Me : were you serious that you can't have kids ?

Even if I am pregnant , my tummy can't grow this quickly right ? We've been intimate for a month

Which will make me 3 weeks pregnant

Tyler : I can have kids just that they won't really be human , that's why I don't want you carrying those things . And I've always been careful my whole life not to impregnate anyone so....

Me : whoa stop right there , what did you say ?

Tyler : sit down

I don't know if I want to , because already I feel like I've been lied to

And he just called his own kids he's able to produce those things . I feel like Tyler is about to annoy me right now , so much that I'll even hate him

But I sit down anyways , and he also sits down . Something tells me this is that talk right now

Tyler : remember I told you I spent a few years with my grandfather , the man who raised my father after his parents died . I'm

not a full blue blood my mother was white , she was killed right after giving birth to me . My father being the one to kill her , for whatever reasons I didn't care to know about . The male species in his lineage are very much gifted in a way that they turn into some kind of animals , with wings . Except that my father is able to take out those wings in his human form . Which I think in a way makes him kind of unique , and Prince takes after him but he turns to an animal . I don't have that , the only reason being my blood is tainted by that of a commoner being my real mother . I accepted myself as I am , and didn't even long to be anything they are . Spending those few years with my grandfather , Dante Oceans I learnt something very great

about him . His father in his early years as a boy , he got involved with a woman whose womb was cursed she was to never bare normal human beings . And it happened that she got pregnant , her husband was against the whole thing . But she went against him anyway , and in just a month her belly apparently looked like that of 3 months pregnant woman . In 5 months the baby was born , and that was my grandfather . Him being born unfortunately killed his mother in the process . He was anything but human , he possessed certain powers that no human can be able to contain . That's why he never had any kids , because he knew they would be born with the curse . Inheriting it from him . Unfortunately for me I suffered that fate of

the curse , in his last days I happened to be there with him . This thing inside of him , wanted to break out because his body was giving up . Its immortal and doesn't die , that's how it come to me . Leaving his dying body it came into mine . And now I live with that curse , but something happened when it came into me . I became it , we became one . I can never die unless it kills me itself . Hence its referred as the Golden God . It feeds off on blood and raw meat . If you were to fall pregnant with my seed , it would kill you . I don't want to lose you , that's why I said what I said . But now we've been intimate and I've been very careless not using protection , and I couldn't get you on any prevention . Because I didn't know how I'll get you to take anything when I said

I'm infertile . I'm sorry I lied . But there's a lot I haven't been truthful about to you , about myself . I'm the leader of the Mafia families of Africa , and I lead the Storm cartel . That's who I am and that's what I do, any other business that I have is not legit . Besides my father's company the one I work for , I don't involve any illegal activities with it because that's my siblings legacy . So I'm in all the illegal operations you can think of , gun smuggling . Illegal organ trading's , human trafficking , drugs and cleaning dirty money I....

Me : stop

I'm crying now , and I can't take any of this

anymore . I don't even know how I
managed to listen to all this until this far

But I can't anymore

-
-
-

Tyler

I've seen her cry many times more than
one, but this is the saddest

And I'm the cause of it , my lies have
contributed to that

She's been crying for a while now , and I
don't know what to say anymore

My greatest fear has become a reality now ,
and I'm not ready for it

I'm loosing the one person who makes
sense in my life

Me : sweetheart

Ledi : don't.....

Ledi doesn't wail when she cries , it's one silent cry and it's pierces through one's heart . And I'm feeling it

Me : I'm sorry

Ledi : we're done Tyler

Me : no

That comes out as a whisper , I can't have her leave me

Ledi : you lied to me , put my life at risk .
What if I'm already pregnant right now ?

Me : then we'll kill it

I say without hesitation and that gets me a slap from her , but of course I didn't feel it

Ledi : I hate you

She gets up running down , I catch up to her right on the stairs

Me : please lets talk about this we...

Ledi : I want nothing to do with you , leave me alone

That is not happening , I try to stop her but she's fighting me

Me : sweetheart please....

Ledi : stop calling me that , you're a selfish man . You do despicable things , and you expect me to be with you after everything ?

Shit

Me : I know I'm all that but....

She tries to pull from me

Me : you're not going anywhere

I raise my voice slightly , not intentionally
but I feel like I'm fighting with myself right
now

Ledi : you can't force me to be with you

Me : I know that , but you're not leaving

Another slap again , she should stop doing
this . But somehow it's not getting me
angry, which is a shocker

Me : I'll leave , but you're not going
anywhere

I take my phone and call Jase

Jase : I...

Me : come to my house now

And she slaps it off , it falls down shattering to pieces . She's not even remorseful , and still I'm not getting angry

This is not normal at all , the god is fighting with me not her

Ledi : I hate you

She can't hate me , I'll make her love me

Me : I'll leave you're not going anywhere

I pack up and go to my parents house in
camps bay , and she'll stay here

Until she's ready to talk to me again , I need
Jase to enforce tight security here

Because I can't leave her unprotected

Me : I'm sorry....

Another slap accompanied by a push , she's
too weak it doesn't make much impact

Or else I would have fallen down these
stairs like the phone

She walks back to the bedroom , by the time I get there she's locked me out

And there's no spare key , now I fear what she might do in there . She can harm herself

And that scares me , I stay by the door . Because I can still hear her crying in the room

I'll break this door down if I think she's even in danger

This went worse than I even thought it'll go like . I fucking messed up big time and I can admit that

INSERT 38

Sambulo

I heard Tyler loud and clear , but then again I'm going through shit . I'm not ready to lose my parents , more especially my mother I just can't

What are we going to become without her ?
I can't lose her , and I know my father will
not be able to make it

He's going to succumb , and I'll be left with
no parent

I don't know that , I don't even want to
know how it feels like

Because the hate that I hold for my real
parents it's something else

I don't understand what kind of a mother
leaves a child in a hospital , just like that

Why didn't she abort me ? That would have been way much better

But I was so fortunate enough to find two loving parents , who never made me lack . They gave me the best

I'm so grateful to them , and now I can't save them . This is not fair at all

Voice : you and the bottle , when did you get here ?

It's been what , over many years and I still remember this voice . I turn already smiling, and it's no shock at all . She's in a waitress uniform

Me : Kea

Kea : you still remember me ?

Me : how can I forget you , my first love

She smiles

Me : And not to forget my first heartbreak

She laughs , I smile

Kea : you still friends with Tyler Oceans ? He a big thing now , always in the news and all that . A Prince , from 3 kingdoms

Me : you're very much well informed

Kea : I keep tabs

Me : then wouldn't you know if we're still friends ?

Kea : that's not out there

I take my glass and down the whiskey

Me : all thanks to you , I made a brother for dear life

She smiles

Kea : wow me again?

Me : you ditched him for me , remember that ?

Kea : is that what you two talk about ?

The nerve , to think that she still holds some kind of power over us

Me : he doesn't even remember you , and I didn't until few minutes ago when I saw you

That hits a nerve , the fuck she thinks she is? Because she's not that relevant anymore

Kea : didn't need to be that savage

But I wouldn't mind fucking her tonight , or
any other day for that matter

Me : what are you doing after this ?

I motion to her , and that doesn't come
across very nice

Kea : some of us didn't have it easy

I won't give her any pity she can forget that
shit

Me : we went to the same expensive ,
kindergarten whatever . So don't go there

She looks down

Me : you haven't answered me

I take her left hand , and there's no ring nor
even a sign that it's there on some days

She laughs

Kea : I'm single thank you very much

Me : and what do you know , two single

people who share a past from the age of 6 .
Let's do dinner or something

Kea : dinner is fine , I don't know about
something

I'll fuck her either way , my phone rings and
it's my father . As much as I want to ignore
it , I can't

My : Dad

Dad : please come home

Me : is she okay ?

Dad : she needs the hospital , but the doctor is coming now

That is enough to get me off the chair

Me : tomorrow night

Kea : you're leaving ?

Me : yeah , give me a call

I pay the bill and leave my number for her . I hope she calls , pussy is the only thing that'll keep me away from alcohol

.

.

Dikeledi

I don't hate Tyler , but he doesn't need to know any of that . Especially after what he did

Lying so much , so many secrets . Who he is, what he does

I can't take this , but I can't lie either . I still love him very much , love doesn't just die over night

Nor over what despicable things a person does . How do I be with a man who does so many wrong things ?

Just when he tells you he's some creature , or god whatever it was he said

The curse , babies who are not human . That he can't die unless the thing kills himself

And then boom he's a Mafia leader , he's a what what cartel

What is wrong with Tyler ? Not even deliverance can help him

On the other hand his family male species
have animals what not , with wings

Like it's a lot , I want nothing to do with any
of these . And the only way to do that is to
get away from him

As much as it'll hurt me more than its
already hurting me now , I just have to . I
didn't sleep a wink , and he was outside this
door the whole night

I can't help and be worried now about this
thing moving inside of me . What if I'm
already pregnant ? I'm not ready to die , nor
will I kill my baby if I'm pregnant already

I will not abort , I refuse to do that . And this means Tyler has to get away from me so that he doesn't see me

He already said it like it's nothing , and the way he calls the baby it and those things . It's insane and inhuman

I will sacrifice myself if I have to , this baby will live for me . As much as I'm disappointed in myself

But it is what it is , and I can't change it . But this scares me . The thought to carry a baby 5 months and already you give birth

Me : what have I gotten myself into ?

I get off the bed , I'm hungry . And it's been over a few hours . To top it up I slept hungry last night

If these babies really feed off the mother , I'm sure this one has already started

I open the door , and he's sitting down on the floor eyes wide open

Me : what are you doing here ?

As if it's my house , but I don't want him here . He's not going to make abort , see me already fighting as if there's a baby already

But I have no doubt there isn't , this thing is not human . So you can just imagine how powerful is the sperm

And I'm sure it's very much so fertile , it even got me to have periods at first time being intimate

Tyler : we need to get you tested for pregnancy

Me : Tyler Oceans don't piss me off , leave

He's getting me angry and if I had the power I would beat him right now

Me : get your ass off the floor and leave

I'm crossing fingers like , I don't want to see any golden what not . But I'm not backing down

Me : leave

Tyler : I will leave just get tested

Me : why ?

Tyler : so you can get rid of that thing if...

Me : say a thing again , I dare you to say it and I'll show you snakes breaks

Tyler : a snake doesn't have breasts

Look at him trying to get clever with me

Me : I don't care leave , it's either you leave or I leave . Your choice

Tyler : sweetheart

Me : you're just annoying me right now

I walk back to the bedroom and take a few of his clothes , I throw him with them

Tyler : okay don't do this sweetheart , I'm leaving

Me : and you're still here ?

He's so calm , and I'm the crazy one shouting . He's really making me look like mad woman right now

Tyler : I'm in love with you

Me : and I hate you , for all of this . Ruining us like this , you never cared about me

Now see I'm crying , and it's not the hurt . But it's because I am shouting . And he gets up and leaves , now I want to scream and say don't go . But no he needs to go . I follow behind him , and as soon as he's out I cry .

Why must everything be so difficult for me?
Haven't I cried enough in this life ?

Just when I think I have it all together now ,
I'm taken 10 steps back . And it's the tears
again

.
.
.

Sambulo

There's really no hope for my mother , the
doctor's say this is the end

But it can't be , I don't want it to be . But I have no powers to save her , I have nothing

Dad : say your goodbyes while you can

Me : dad no

Dad : son....

Me : no , they have to do something

Dad : they tried but....

Me : but nothing , this is their job to save lives . Not to tell us that this is the end

Dad : they're doctors , and not miracle workers . There's nothing they can do

Me : I refuse to believe this , there needs to be something we can do

Dad : please stop hurting yourself like this , say goodbye . I'll wait for you outside

And he's serious , he walks out . I look at my pale mother on this bed

Me : why?

Mom : baby.....

She's tired and you can see she can't hold on for much longer

Mom : if not me ...then who ?

Me : I don't care who , just not you

Mom : I need to tell you something , sit down . I don't have much longer

I sit down only for her sake I don't want to

Mom : your mother....

Me : don't

I don't understand why do people do this when they die , spill beans they've been holding for years and years

Mom : let me , please

Why is she begging me ? Now I feel bad because it's her . The woman who raised me , and made me this man that I am today

Me : I'm sorry

She smiles and holds her hand out , I take it

Mom : she was working for us ...many years ago . And she...her living conditions weren't

that good . She was married to an abusive man . She tried to run away , many times but with fail . She fell pregnant with you , oh it was a beautiful blessing to her . But not for the man she was married to , he wanted her to abort she refused . She endured the abuse pregnant with you like that , closer to giving birth she overheard him talking on the phone . He was planning to have you sacrificed for riches . She had no one , her family wanted nothing to do with her . She really had no option , that's why she left you at the hospital . But the second she walked out of there , she made sure to call me and tell me where you were. She begged me to find you and raise you like my own , and if I couldn't she asked that I find you a good home because she

failed . I rushed over to the hospital , and indeed found you , the first time I laid eyes on you . I just know I had to have you , so I couldn't take you anywhere else but to our home . She had on a letter with you there , that had your name already . It took us a few weeks to learn how to say it , but we did and when we found the meaning of it we knew it was perfect . That's why we didn't even change it , but just gave you our surname . We moved from KZN to Cape Town , and raised you there . I'm not telling you this so you can feel pity for her , but I want you to heal now . And know you're not alone in this world . I heard she passed away , but she had two more other children. A son and a daughter , you're not alone . Son I love you so much , your father

loves you . And trust me your mother loved you as well . She did what any mother could have done for their kid . Please forgiveand find....find your siblings . Thomas won't take my deathvery well....no man is an island , please find....the letter is...is in your....room at home . The blue box ...II lo....

Me : mom

Now I'm crying , and I can't stop these tears

Mom : I love....you

The damn machine goes off , doctors rush in . But what's the point she's gone now

Me : mom no !

Dad : son please

He pulls me out , I bread down on his chest

Dad : it's okay

It's not okay , this can't be okay at all .

There's no way that it's okay

I didn't even tell her that I love her too , it's not okay it's just not okay

.

.

INSERT 39

Tyler

I'm going crazy here going out of my mind , something tells me Ledi is pregnant . But now she's refusing to kill that thing , she doesn't want to get checked

She's turning all Dante's mother on me right now , and I don't want to have that .

There's no way I'm going to watch her get killed like this , I might as well might have killed her myself

How do fuck am I going go live with myself after she dies giving birth to that thing ?

Jase : why are you back here ?

He's brought the meat , I take it from him and walk to the kitchen

Jase : I'm just going to be disgusted watching you eat that , drink that

He points to the glass of blood by the counter . I take a piece and put it on the plate . It's still fresh so there's blood oozing out of it , I sit down

Jase : so you won't answer me ?

Me : what's it to you ?

Jase : well you're back here , yesterday you summoned me to reinforce security at the house

Me : so you're thinking I'm running away from something ?

Jase : you don't run away from anything , so it can't be that

Me : well it's one crazy woman

I shake my head saying so , that tiny woman is going to be my end . Does she know what's going to happen to me if she dies ?

I'm so not ready to be accountable for her blood , but how do I get her tested ? She's refusing me anywhere near her

Jase : right , the madam has you out of the house

I start eating and that has him walking out ,
just because he can't stomach seeing me
eating raw meat

I'm eating right now , and it's disturbing me
a bit . To think of she's pregnant already
that thing is feasting on her

It won't be long until she shows , and makes
me wonder how long she'll hold on

How long she'll be able to endure this , she
should just let me cut her open and take
that thing out

Maybe even abortion pills won't kill it

Sambulo

I'm seeing and going through the most , this pain cannot be compared to anything

I'm not the first one to loose a parent , makes me wonder how those who have been here dealt with their loss

I don't see how I'll get over this , what's this life without a mother ? When the world is this cruel

Worse my father is not taking this well at all, all of yesterday he locked himself in his room

And I'm failing to be a son and comfort him, because I don't know how to . Even my own pain is controlling me

I don't see how I can make his better , he just lost the love of his life

The woman he spent 39 years together with, how do you deal with that and move on ?

Now I get what my mother said , my father is not going to be able to deal with this

And he won't make it , I should just prepare myself to say goodbye to him as well

It's either his heart will fail him , or he will literally kill himself

And no it's not him being selfish , it's him not seeing this life without my mother

I won't even blame nor hate him , because I get his pain

Family members have already arrived , they just didn't waste time . And I feel like sending them back , I somehow don't want any of them here

But it is what it is , and I can't bare being in their presence so I left

And ended up in a bar , right after seeing so many missed calls from a certain number

And figuring out that it's from Kea , I decided to indulge her

Me : leaving already ?

We bump to each other at the other

Kea : ah you

Okay she's not pleased with me

Me : don't be like that

Kea : I'm not desperate Sambulo

Me : I never said you were

Kea : I called you once twice , too many times

Me : let's have a drink , I'll explain

Kea : don't be those kind of men

Me : I'm not come on

She debates with herself , but we end up walking in and sitting down

We order drinks , and since her shift is over she can drink

Me : my mother passed away , I'm just having difficulties dealing with that loss

She stretches her hand over the table and holds mine . I don't appreciate this gesture , but I'll let her be

Kea : I'm so sorry , I even lack words to comfort you . But my condolences , and my heart goes out to you and your father

I nod

Me : thank you , I don't know how to go on without her . Nothing makes sense right now , and I feel like it's about to turn tables

See women and being sentimental ? Now she comes and stays right next to me

Her one hand over my back , while the other holds my hand still

Me : but I'll be fine

Kea : if you need anything , and I mean anything at all . I'm your girl to call

I might just call her tonight , and everyday
after that

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Last night I didn't sleep a wink , here I am
again tonight wide awake because I can't
sleep

I miss Tyler , I miss his touch his breath . I
want him next to me , holding me
throughout the whole night

I hate all of this , how am I supposed to get
over him ? When he's the only thing that's
on my mind

I'm going crazy this side , and now I can't
take it . I take my phone and call him , he
answers first ring beats me why he's not
asleep

Tyler : sweetheart...

Me : don't call me that

And I drop the call , he doesn't get to hurt me this much and call me sweetheart

When he calls me like that he awakens the sleeping things , and right now I'm angry at him

I've dumped him , he can't call me sweetheart like all is well . He's just making me feel like he doesn't take the break up serious

I call him again , don't look at me like that . And I'm not crazy at all , he answers again and goes quite

Me : come cuddle me I can't sleep

I won't even say please , so he can know
just now desperate I am for him no ways

Tyler : okay I'm coming

I drop the call , and rush downstairs . As if
he said he was already outside

But this suspicious , it's a few minutes later
a knock comes at the door

And I've learnt to know his knock so it's
really him , I open and it's him

Me : why does it feel like you weren't far ?

I pretend like I was still upstairs the whole time , he can't know how I rushed down here just to wait for him

Tyler : I was outside your gate

Me : doing what ?

Tyler : sitting in my car

Is he sweet ? But no I hate him right now , and we're no longer together

And this somehow gives me some relief , I couldn't help but wonder if he's not in bed with another woman

If I'm not already replaced , I think that's what's depriving me of sleep

I swear I'll go crazy if he ever moves on with another woman , he'll rather turn gay and I won't mind seeing him with a guy

Me : that's creepy and I can have you arrested

This is my even my house , have him arrested for what reasons ? I need a hard reality slap

Tyler : okay , let's go to bed

I don't want to listen to him , but I want him next to me . And this calmness of his is starting to annoy me

Why isn't he getting angry and reacting ? Instead he's just making me look like I'm mad

Not that I want to see him angry , but I'm just saying you know . This one is making me look like I'm some mental case

We get to the bedroom , and he takes his clothes off leaving only his briefs . We get into bed . I turn from him , he brings me closer to him . But the second his hand goes to my stomach I push him

Me : don't do that

Tyler scared me with what he said

Tyler : are you pre....

Me : stop , I didn't call you here to
interrogate me

Tyler : sweetheart if you are , then we need
to deal with this

Me : even if I am , what you need to know is
that I will not abort . I won't kill my child to
make you feel better about yourself . You
should have been honest with me , before

we even got intimate . But now you went all silent , now give me the same silent

Tyler : I messed up I know , but this thing will kill you

Me : stop saying a thing

I shout , he sighs

Tyler : I'm sorry sweetheart

Me : can you just let me sleep ?

He goes quite , I turn and face him . He has his eyes wide open

There's just worry and hate in his eyes ,
there's concern . It's just a mixture of mixed
emotions

Me : I swear if you force me to loose this
child anyhow , I'll hate you for the rest of
my life

He says nothing but kisses my forehead , I
snuggle right underneath him and get my
sleep

.

.

.

Tyler

Now I'm convinced she's pregnant , maybe I should spike her food with something

Even if it doesn't kill that thing , but it'll get her to see a doctor

And of course I'll take her to a doctor trusted to me , someone who will be able to keep quite about this

If there's anything inside of her , already it's grown bigger than it should

That would alert any doctor , and I don't need any of that . This might just work out fine

And spiking her food or drink won't kill her ,
the thing would shield her from any harm .
To keep itself alive , nothing can kill her
until the ready time for it to come out

This right here is an idea and it better
fucking work out . She moves away from
me, and I swear she went crazy in two days

I don't even know who she is anymore , she
still looks like my sweetheart . But she's
always breathing fire at me

Ledi : sleep over is done , you can leave
now. And please don't wait outside my gate
Tyler , I swear I'll have you arrested

I should be grateful we didn't have sex ,
because I would feel so betrayed

She gets off the bed and walks to the
bathroom , I don't want to be chased out of
here again

So I get up and put on my clothes and make
the bed , I might just get told off about it

I wait until she's back from taking her
shower

Me : okay I'm leaving now

Ledi : getting far away from here

Me : yeah

She goes to sit on her dressing table , and I can't take this anymore . I walk to her and kiss the top of her head

Me : sweetheart I'm sorry

Ledi : unfortunately it doesn't erase anything , I can't be with a man like yourself Tyler

That hurts okay , but this is my woman and I'm her man . There's no way that I won't have her back

Me : you're coming with me to Botswana or should I book you're a different flight ?

Ledi : a different flight for what ? Who are you taking with ?

Not this

Me : okay , I'll see you in a few days then

I walk towards the door

Ledi : so you won't answer me ?

She's about to cry right now

Me : sweetheart I'm not taking anyone ,
you're upset with me right now . So I
needed to know if you wouldn't mind being
on the same flight as me

She says nothing , I stand at the door for a
while before leaving

I swear she's driving me crazy , but I can't
even have a single reaction towards her

I'm calm as ever , and this is concerning me.
The way she has drove me insane for the
past two days

I should have lost my cool with her at some
point

INSERT 40

Sambulo

She gets off me laughing off to the bed
laying down next to me

Kea : damn you have energy for days on end

I face her , and play with her nipples

Me : one for the road ?

Kea : Sambulo no

She says laughing

Me : it was a great night and morning

Kea : indeed it was

Me : can there be more ?

Kea : is that what you want ?

Me : give me a kiss , I'll tell you

She leans over and we kiss , I lift her leg and slide my dick inside of her

Kea : oh my god !

I pound in , and she welcomes me hard and faster like that

Kea : oh my....ahhh don't stop

I turn her over , and get on top of her . I
don't slower my pace , I don't want to make
love

I'm not looking for pleasure , I want to have
sex and that's what I'm taking from her

The harder and deeper I go in , the more
her screams fill this room . I move up
getting on my knees

Putting her legs over my shoulders , I ram
inside of her . I'm just releasing frustration

Kea : Ohhhh fuck

She screams her lungs out as we both , cum soon one after another

I lay next to her , she's panting like crazy . I'm just sweating a lot

Kea : damn , I feel for your girlfriend

I don't know why , but her saying this makes me think about Princess

But fuck she's a child and my friends sister , and not to mention I'm just not in the right place for a relationship right now . I would hurt her , and that would mess things up for me and Tyler

Kea : wait don't tell me there's no girlfriend

Me : she's out of the country at the moment , and we're waiting for marriage before we get it done

Kea : oh

The disappointment , she really thought I was going to say there's no girlfriend

And that gave her the upper level , I'm not looking for something solid with Kea

.

.

.

Prince

All roads lead to Botswana this weekend ,
and that's what on everyone's mind

And I actually can't wait to see my sister ,
we do talk everyday . But FaceTime is not
the same as seeing her

And I think now I'm in a right and better
space to face her , so we can iron out some
issues between us

I do have my life in order , believe me I do .
And it won't take me few weeks of turning
into a beast in the woods

For me to suddenly be hard-core , and the
man I'm expected to be

But one thing I that I'm no longer a
pushover , I don't take nonsense from no
one

I stand my ground now , still not loosing the
respect and morals when doing so

Lira : good morning handsome

One stray girl I started fucking with weeks ago , there have been others yes . But she's just been constant

And I've never been so careful in my entire life , she's taking the pill . And I'm always on plastic all the time

One time she suggested we don't use it , and I told her straight no condom no sex

And of course we ended up using it , I can't trust her and be stupid again

Once bitten twice shy , I don't need a repeat of last time . I don't even dream of it

Me : morning

She pecks my cheek

Lira : you're up early

Me : so are you

She smiles

Lira : my body is tired , you worn me out last night . Now I need to be up doing something already

Me : that's not how usually people do it . They sleep in rather than getting up

Lira : I guess I'm just one of a kind

Me : indeed you're one of your own kind

A knock comes at the door , I pull up sweatpants and t-shirt and open . It's my mother

Me : my queen

Mom : Azania wants you

This is a miracle , but I did not call my mother a liar

Me : she what ?

Mom : Prince , she wants you Prince

Did she tell her that ? And how ? Cause she's only 2 months , and that baby doesn't know how to talk

Mom : I'm giving you 5 minutes , be in the house and I don't want to hear her crying

Me : but

She tells me to shut up , with her finger .
Leaving me going back into the house

Now I'm out of words , this is just an embarrassment , I sigh closing the door

Me : so apparently my 2 months old sister is crying for me , I have to attend to that . I'll be back , if you happen to be fine by the time I get back . I'll give you a call

Lira : okay

She just wants to laugh , but who wouldn't? My mother is dealing me right now , Azania is in no position to cry for anyone

.
. .
. . .

Tyler

I don't get why she's making us both suffer this much , she misses me as much as I miss her

She wants me as much as I want her , but she's busy pushing me away

To top it all up , she blocked me . Imagine what was the blocking all for ?

There was no need for that , and this gives me no access to her

I'm counting on this weekend , no matter I'll find something to give her . I'm on call with my excited sister , that's we're ball coming to see her in two days

Me : but are you good ?

Princess : it was hard at first , but I'm getting used to everything now

Me : that's good

Princess : and how have you guys been ?

Me : we're good

I know Ledi won't tell her anything , so I don't need to blab about any of this that's happening

Princess : but you don't sound good

Me : don't worry , it's just that Sambulo lost his mother . I'm actually heading there right now , for the funeral

She goes quite for a while , and I hope she's over that stupid crush of hers

Princess : that's sad

Me : yeah it is

Princess : please pass my condolences

Me : I don't know how to do that , but okay

She laughs

Princess : you never cease to amaze me

Me : I love you okay

Princess : I love you

We hang up , arriving at Sambulo's home
the others have arrived already

Waiting near our cars for a while , he comes
out . I really don't do well with funerals

For the one reason that , I kill people and
they get to have burials . So attending one
just feels awkward

Sambulo : and it's the good men

Jase : that can only be us

I say it's all nice to wish to for something
you know very well you're not

Like them being good men , but let me not
dispute

Sambulo : you can go in , they're a out to
start

The guys walk inside leaving us by the street

Sambulo : you won't believe who's here

Me : who ?

Sambulo : Kea

Me : that Kea ?

Sambulo : the one and only

Me : and you've been fucking with her

His face says it all

Sambulo : he shrugs his shoulders

Me : well then

We walk inside

Me : my sister passes her condolences

Sambulo : for real ?

He has one smile that's annoying me

Me : yeah

Sambulo : pity I don't have her phone number I could call and thank her myself

Me : kill that idea , it's not happening

He laughs

-
-
-

Dikeledi

My idiotic self blocked Tyler , because I was always tempted to call him every second

I couldn't take it , so I blocked him . And that only happened for s few hours

I was back to unblocking him again , only sad thing is that I don't have those numbers anymore

I don't even know them by heart , I'm so doomed it's not even funny

Now I miss him so bad , like I want him here. And he hasn't called me

Now I'm sad hurt and angry , why isn't he calling me ?

I'm sitting down in the lounge floor with a tub of ice cream and cranberry juice

I'm crying everything is just a mess , the one scary thing happening right now is that my bones are hurting

I don't even get how this is normal , but it's so happening and I'm feeling the pain physically

It's like it'll break or something , and this is scaring me because it's causing me pain

My phone rings and it's the lady of the moment this weekend , I wipe the tears and answer

Me : my queen to be

She laughs

Princess : you're still silly

Me : I miss you , what can I say ?

Princess : can't wait to see you this weekend , and I just took a chance calling you . I thought you'll be at Sambulo's mother's funeral as well . Spoke to Tyler an hour ago said he was headed there

I knew nothing about the funeral , or that her brother is gone there

Me : no I'm home

Princess : I'm glad , I have spare time so we can use that to gossip

Me : don't tell me you're dating already

She laughs

Princess : I can tell you this , boys in this village don't take seriously as the queen

Me : they just see a girlfriend

Princess : and nothing more

Me : anyone caught your eye yet ?

Princess : someone I left back in South Africa

She accompanies that with a slight sigh

Me : and I'm only finding out about this ?

Princess : it's complicated in a way , and I don't see it happening in a way

Me : wow , do I know him ?

She goes quite

Me : okay , I'm butting out

Princess : it's Sambulo

I choke on this juice , and it's a mess in this lounge

I thought I was having it hard , but she loves her brothers friend

Princess : are you okay ?

Me : yeah mhm...does he know this ?

Princess : I don't know , maybe he does maybe he doesn't

Me : and Tyler ?

Princess : I don't know either , but if he didn't know it's only a matter of time before he knows

I don't know what to say about this , clearly she really feels something for him

She's been gone for a while , and still she's still thinking about him

But I don't see Tyler agreeing to this , this is his little sister . Sambulo is his best friend

.

.

.

INSERT 41

Sambulo

I appreciate the guys coming , and now it's
sinking in that she's gone

Having to see her coffin going down the
grave , she's no more and never coming
back

I appreciate this woman for raising me , for
never making me feel adopted

I heard what she said about my biological mother , the grown up Sambulo understands

But the little Sambulo who always wondered and never understood why he had white parents

Doesn't understand , now I'm conflicted I don't what is what

Worse she's also gone , I can't get any answered from her . Her kids won't have anything for me even if I find them

Tyler : I'm leaving

Me : what's wrong with you ?

He's bothered , there's something with him that's off

Tyler : women what else , she kicked me out of my own house . Now I'm back in Camps Bay , and I camp outside the house at night

I laugh , and I think I'm having tough

Me : are you for real ?

Tyler : she's gone crazy okay

Me : what did you do ?

Tyler : lies what else , but I need you to do something for me

Me : what ?

Tyler : find me something I can use to cause someone sick . Something I can spike a drink with or food

Me : sick like dying sick or hospitalized ?

Tyler : hospitalized

Me : okay , how soon ?

Tyler : as in like yesterday Sambulo

Me : fine , I hope you're not going to use that on her . So she can need you and you get to go back home

Tyler : what do you take me for ?

Me : you're capable of anything so

Voice : wow , and it's like kindergarten again

The annoyance on Tyler's face

Kea : Tyler Oceans

Tyler : It's Zungu to you

Okay he's not amused

Kea : my bad , look at you all grown up and one hella man

She can't be a whore no ways , I was fucking her just last night and the night before that

Not to mention this morning, and she's here already flirting with Tyler

Kea : it's good to see you after all these years

Tyler : right

Kea : still no ring , I see I lost out on a good one

Tyler : for a boy with white parents

I laugh , why is he involving me

Kea : well , I'm sorry about that

Tyler : you didn't hurt me get over yourself , and don't do that to yourself

Ouch

Tyler : my wife is waiting for me , don't

forget that thing . I'm going to Botswana tomorrow

Me : for the princess thing ?

The look he gives me , but I don't care I long to see that young thing again

Tyler : yeah and you're not coming , so fuck off

Me : I'll pay for my own flight

Tyler : Sambulo stay away

He walks away , I don't want to stay away .
I'm getting a flight to go there

He'll kill me forward

Kea : so he's married ?

Me : yeah fuck off , you're a skank

And she slaps me

Kea : how dare you say that to me ? That's
not what you were saying when you were
between my thighs

Me : I was so in there , and now you were flirting with my friend

I walk away from her , these women are not loyal . And there goes a casual fuck

- .
- .
- .

Dikeledi

This tummy is really growing , and I can't ignore this movement it's there

Now I'm scared , because of the pain I'm feeling in my body . More especially on my bones

I'm done packing , and ready to go . I don't know where that Tyler is at

And I'm so angry at him right now , he didn't call me all of yesterday .

So you can imagine the tears I cried last night and this morning , I just want him to get here

So I can go off at him , he's really not my favourite person right now . Why didn't he call me ? I unblocked him

And right on time he walks in , I want to jump on him . But I want to kill him more

Tyler : sweetheart are you ready ?

I say nothing and hand him the bag

Tyler : is this all ?

Me : is there supposed to be more ?

He sighs

Tyler : no , I was just asking

We walk out the door , and get into his car

Me : where were you last night ?

I can't hold myself

Tyler : are you genuinely asking , or ...

Me : just answer the question

Tyler : outside the gate

I give him one suspicious look

Tyler : check the security cameras when we

get back , getting back from the funeral I
was here all night

I feel for him , and I'm not liking myself right
now . Why am I crazy ?

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

An hour's and hours flight journey with a
sulking and angry Ledi wasn't fun for me at
all

And worse the drive to the kingdom , I can't wait for the weekend to be done so we can go back to Cape Town

And I find a way to deal with this issue , she's really not letting me have it easy at all

But I'm surprising myself and not loosing patience with her

Me : you need anything ?

Ledi : yes

Me : okay what ?

Ledi : just keep away from me

And she says getting off the car . Remind me again why I wasn't honest in the first place

We wouldn't be here to begin with , but here we are and I'm feeling the heat

My phone rings and it's Princess , I answer

Me : we are here

Princess : okay

I drop the call , I knew that's why she was calling . I don't know why she thought we wouldn't come to begin with

She comes out going to her friend , I get off the car . And they shed some tears together

And I see I am not to be entertained , so I leave them and walk inside the house

I'm welcomed by my cousin's , seems like we are too late . This answers why she thought we wouldn't make it

Lonwabo : you still live ?

Me : did you send one of your creatures to finish me off ?

They laugh

Liyana : don't mind him , you're looking good

Me : have I never ?

Liyana : stop with the bragging

And she hugs me , this affection thing she has is really annoying . But I hug her either way , before she goes crying

Me : good to see you kid

Liyana : kid at just a year difference

Lumkile : it's still a difference

He says walking in

Liyana : does that count to you as well ?

Lumkile : you'll cry

She pouts

Me : you still do this ?

Her brothers laugh

Liyana : you guys are not being nice

She walks out , and we're never going to
heat the end of this

Me : I wonder when she'll ever grow up

Luxolo : the day your father stops babying
her

Luthando : let him hear you say that

Luxolo : I'll rather not , so where can we go
get drunk here ?

Wouldn't that be nice ? But I'm already dealing with a lot

And I'm in the dog house , getting drunk is the last thing I need . I might just get crucified for it

.

.

.

Princess

Everyone has arrived now , even my parents. I haven't had time to go sit and talk with them

And the ceremony will take place , in a hour or so right at the Batlokoa river

I haven't been there , because there's possibilities I may come back or not

And that scares me , but I don't think I have anything to worry about

The fallen queens don't want me as one of them , so I'm staying optimistic that I'll come back

I'm with Ledi now in my hut , and she doesn't look good . And I don't mean physically , even though she does look like she's taking strain

She doesn't look emotionally , and I'm scared to even poke there

Me : what's wrong ?

She looks at me

Me : I can see you're not okay

She sighs , laying back down on the bed

Ledi : a lot has happened

Me : with you and Tyler ?

She nods but also shaking her head

Me : you're confusing me

Ledi : I'm confused more than you are

Me : you want to talk ?

Ledi : I don't want to ruin your night

Me : worry not about me

Ledi : okay well , where do I begin ?

Me : anywhere

She smiles

Ledi : so I've decided to stay with him in
Cape Town

Me : I figured that one when you decided to
go with UCT rather than Wits

She laughs

Ledi : crazy but that's love and apparently it
makes one do crazy things

Me : I think I have a slight idea , so how has
that been working out ?

Ledi : Tyler is everything and more

Me : never thought I'll see the day , but I'm happy for you both . You both deserve this

Ledi : yeah

Me : there's something else

I don't want to push too hard

Ledi : I found out my mother left me a house , a car and half a million rand

Me : what ?

She nods

Me : no ways , but how ?

Ledi : exactly what I asked your brother

Me : he's the one who told you this ?

She nods

Me : wow

And then I remember , I once asked him to
find out what her mother said she left for
her

But he ever got back to me with that , so I figured that maybe he wasn't able to

Ledi : but the house is in KZN , and I've moved to Cape Town . I don't plan to sell it though , I might need it one day

Me : you shouldn't sell it

She's taken aback , like she was expecting me to say sell it you're starting your life elsewhere

Me : it's a gift from your mother to you , cherish and keep it

She smiles

Ledi : yeah

The door opens my mother walks in with
my aunt

Mom : and you're still gossiping

Me : no

Mom : it's okay , I know it never ends with
girls

We laugh , my aunt's eyes are not leaving
Ledi and it's worrying me a bit

I hope even if she's seeing something , it's that of the past . My friend has been through enough . And I hope she says nothing about it , the past is best left in the past

Mom : you need to get ready baby , the sun has set and Kwena is ready for you

Me : okay

Mom : we'll leave you to it , call if you need help

She walks out with Ledi , my aunt stays behind

Me : is everything okay ?

She nods

Me : aunty Asante , I saw how you were looking at Ledi

Aunt Asante : who is she ?

Me : her name is Dikeledi Moloji , she's my friend from back home

Aunt Asante : I see

Me : is anything the matter ?

The problem with gifted people , they never ask questions for no reason

Aunt Asante : is she pregnant ?

Oh no , this one is never wrong when it comes to such things

Me : no she's not

I hope she's not

Aunt Asante : are you sure ?

Me : yeah she would have told me if she was

Okay she thinks I'm crazy , and I think I'm crazy too . Because clearly something is bothering Ledi

Aunt Asante : okay then

She walks out , I take my dress and get dressed . I won't be wearing any shoes walking barefoot

I walk out heading to the river , and it's so full . The whole village is out there , my family

I spot Tyler , he's a bit far from Ledi who's with my mother and Azania

I call him over and he comes

Me : sorry to call you like this , but is Ledi pregnant ?

I can never read Tyler , nor get his reaction

Tyler : where do you get that from ?

Me : Aunt Asante think she is , and we all know she's never wrong with that

Tyler : Asante is human at the end of the day

Okay , I'm not doing this with him

Me : for your sake I hope she's not , mother will have you dead

I walk away from him seeing Kwena heading to the river

I wouldn't mind being an aunt myself , but I know my mother is not going to like this very much

She's just going to see it like Tyler has ruined Ledi's future

.

.

.

INSERT 42

Prince

This weather has us freezing cold , I guess
we're all just thankful that it's not raining

Kwena is done with his rituals , and Princess
has gone into the water

Now the waiting part has started , and
we're not to move or leave here until the
fallen queens come forth

If they don't then she's gone to join them ,
and therefore a new regent to the throne
would be chosen

I don't like this ritual part at all , I want my
sister to come back

Luxolo : who's that ?

I trail my eyes to where he's looking , and
this guy has a death wish

Me : you tired of living ?

I ask with a smirk

Luxolo : are you going to answer me ?

Me : are you going to answer me ?

Luxolo : Prince , I'm not your mate

I shake my head

Me : Stay away from her

Luxolo : why ? Is she your future queen ?

Me : no she's not , I was beaten to it

Luxolo : you're slow boy , by who ?

Me : Tyler

He cringes

Me : yeah so stay away , he's killed for her .
You don't want to be added on the list.

I say so carelessly to him , because there's
no way they can be uncle Lubanzi's sons
and be innocent

Luxolo : so he's really in there ?

Me : he's within

He frowns

Me : hope you heard me

The loud ululations bring me back to what's
happening here

And my sister is coming out of the water ,
with the fallen queens sceptre and crown

My mother tears up , and the look on my
father's face . I've never seen him this
prouder

I hope one day I can make him even
prouder of myself

Liyana : now this is what I calm a queen

I'm surprised she's not even jealous that Princess is the queen and not her

Seeing that they share the same kinds of gifts , with water and the fallen queens

Kwena : Batlokoa ke eo kgosikgadi ya rona kgosikgadi Gomotsegang Batlokoa (Here is our Queen)

The second she raises the sceptre it pours , it doesn't rain it pours

Lumkile : I hate this

See him walking away , this guy's life must be too tiring

He's too serious , like this is no way for a human being to live

Luthando : what does that mean ?

They're also uncomfortable right here next time me , like this rain water is irritating them

Me : what ?

Luthando : the name ?

Lonwabo : and why so many Gggg ? We'll never be able to call her with that

Me : you better learn , she's no longer Princess now , but Kgosikgadi Gomotsegang

They're so annoyed , it's actually hella fun to watch

Luxolo : I can't stand this

He's another one that walks away , soon after the two follow him

Me : and that ?

Liyana : don't mind them , they don't get along with rain

She's dismissing me , and I feel like there's more to that

.

.

.

Dikeledi

The nice thing is just being introduced as Princess's friend , to all the cousins and close uncle's and aunts

I can't handle the she's Tyler's girlfriend
introduction , imagine the she's the
girlfriend

And already she's attending important
family functions , I would die

The ceremony went great , but it's a whole
night thing that's just doesn't seem like it's
about to end any time soon

I'm getting cold now , and it's
uncomfortable . The coldness it's not
pleasing at all

Voice : here you'll catch a cold

He puts on his jacket on me , and I missed this . Even his scent that's all over it

He sits down next to me , don't be judgemental now . But I lean over to him , lay my head in his shoulder

And he puts his hand over my shoulders , now this is what my peace is like

And right now I see how much I don't want to lose this , I can overlook everything else

The Mafia's the cartel and all that , maybe even this golden god thing

But the one thing that will keep us apart , is this baby . I will not abort no matter what

Me : don't get any ideas , we're still over

Tyler : yeah I hear you

He hears me , but I feel like he's saying I'm crazy

And maybe I am , but I will not compromise on killing an innocent child

I don't care how he sees this baby as a thing, but it's not a thing to me it's my child

Me : I'm a bit tired

Tyler : you sleeping with Princess ?

I look at him , we didn't speak about that with Princess

Me : can't you take me to your hut ?

Tyler : okay let's go

Me : wait ... Will you be sleeping in there too ?

Tyler : don't you want me cuddling you at night ?

Me : I do

Tyler : okay then

.

.

.

Princess

Being underwater was the scariest ,
because I was scared that maybe I won't
come back

And I didn't even see the fallen queens
down there , but I found what I went down
there to find

I woke up feverish today , and it's all
because of the rain and coldness of last
night

I don't understand why the ceremony had
to be done at night , and it had to rain on
top of that like it wasn't cold enough

I'm in tracksuits and sneakers , imagine in
the heat of Botswana

I wanted to stay in bed , but first day as
queen wouldn't that be something else

Voice : I can never say that name even if I liked , so I think I'll stick to the simple queen

No ways , it's not him no ways .

Sambulo : how are you ?

He comes in front of me already he's all smiles , now I'm sweating . Where was he all along ?

Me : oh my god you came like....

The slight laugh , yes he asked me a question . And that's what I should be answering him not this

Me : i....uhm I'm fine yes

Sambulo : we need to fix this speech problem you have every time you talk to me

Me : don't... embarrass me

Sambulo : you're the queen and I can never

Me : thank you

Sambulo : and yes I came , even though I never got an invite but I came because I wanted to see you

All I heard was that he wanted to see me

Me : I appreciate you coming

Sambulo : right , you care for a walk with me ? Or would I be stepping on your toes ?

Me : a walk is perfect

We take this walk just around the royal yard, it's huge and a walking distance to the palace

Sambulo : can I hold your hand ?

Why ask when he can just do it ? I look at him , and he smiles . This smile is my death , there I said it

Sambulo : you're a queen , I don't know my boundaries with you

Me : how about there are no boundaries between us ?

I say really meaning that , but I realise what I've said when he gives me one inquiring look

Me : oh I meant...

He takes my hand into his , and I feel like I'm having a near death experience . I feel every emotion right now inside of him , the cry the hurt and the pain

But the last part finishes me , I find myself looking at his palm and it's the same as hers

Sambulo : what's wrong ?

He's worried , but who wouldn't be ? I'm crying as it is

Me : I'm sorry for your loss

Sambulo : what ?

Me : the mother who raised you

Sambulo : oh that thank you , but why are you crying ? It hurts yes but it'll pass

Me : please honour her last wishes , find your sister she needs you more than you need her please she's been through the worst pain ever . You can be the light she needs

He looks at me so lost , I remove my hand from his

Me : and she's not far

I walk way from him , wiping my tears that keep falling

Sambulo : Princess wait

Oh no he's coming after me , see me running to my hut just to get away from him

I even lock myself in and just cry , how are they siblings and they don't know this ?

And they share the same mother and father. This doesn't make sense

.

.

.

INSERT 43

Tyler

Sambulo asks to see me , and I hate him right now . I have this woman in my hands

We spent the night together , and I wasn't kicked out in the morning . How nice

And he just had to come and disturb all this moment

Me : this better be important

Sambulo : I'm worried about your sister

Me : Sambulo

Sambulo : wait , listen to me

Okay now he's worrying me , and I don't like this

Me : okay

Sambulo : we were taking a walk

Me : together with my sister Sambulo

Sambulo : she's 18 and not a child so stop , and I didn't say I want her

I chuckle

Me : I'm so going to kill you

Sambulo : fine , but right now she's in her hut locked herself and she's crying

Me : what did you do ?

I know Sambulo , he would never hurt her .
But she's crying , and she was with him

Sambulo : she started crying , and said something about being sorry for my loss .
The she went on to say I should honour my mother's last wish , and I need to find my sister look it was a mess . And she didn't make sense to me , she just ran off

I shake my head , I want to smash his head

right now but if it happened this way then I can't fault him

Me : I appreciate you coming to tell me this

He nods , I leave him there and walk to Princess's hut . I knock once and she opens

She's a mess crying , I walk in and lock the door again .

When she gets like this she doesn't want to be disturbed , it's even a miracle she opened for me

Me : what's wrong ? Sambulo gave me his side of the story

We sit down

Princess : it was his fault

Me : kaManzini what happened ?

Princess : he's ... he's Ledi's brother

Me : what ?

Princess : I held his hand , and their palms are the same . They share the same blood of both parents

Me : okay , and you got this from just holding his hand ?

Princess : I don't know how it happened but it just did

Me : okay , and you're sure about this ?

She nods , I bring her close and wipe her tears off

Me : it's okay , I'll fix this leave it to me

Princess : okay

Me : now stop crying , and go see that
idiotic boy he's going out of his mind

The smile , and I hate it because I see where
this is going

And Sambulo better get his act together ,
before he even thinks to peruse anything
with my sister

.

.

.

Sambulo

Now I feel bad really bad and my day has just been hell , and it's like Princess is avoiding me

I haven't seen her since that crazy encounter in the morning , and I wish I can see her

I feel like they're something she can tell me, how did she know about all that ?

I know they're gifted in a way, Tyler has once told me that . But I'm not really informed about their gifts that much

Voice : can we talk please , I won't ...

I turn and just engulf her into a tight hug

Princess : you're crushing my bones

Me : yeah I know , just let me I'll let go in a few

She laughs , and now I don't want to let go

Me : I'm sorry I made you cry like that , my life is a mess that much I know . But it's a lot on me and a lot of things don't make sense at all

Princess : it's okay , I understand and in sorry I freaked you out like that

Me : you said this sister of mine is closer ,
you know who she is ? Because I just found
out about my real family , when my
adoptive mother was on her death bed

Princess : I can't tell you...

Me : please

Princess : Tyler said he'll deal with it

Me : please I'm begging you , I didn't think
about this . I wasn't even sure that I'd want
to find my siblings , but if there's a chance I
can then help me if you can

Princess : your brother is dead , it's just the sister only

Me : oh

This is just too much death

Me : so you know her ?

She nods

Me : and....

Princess : it's Dikeledi

No ways

Me : your brothers girlfriend ?

She nods

Me : but how do you know that ?

Princess : your palm it's the same as hers ,
and you share the same blood

Me : from ?

Princess : both parents

So I guess my mother was right

Princess : I have to go join everyone for dinner now

She pulls out to walk away , I pull her back to me

Me : will I see before I leave tomorrow ?

Princess : what time are you leaving ?

Me : any time you want me to leave

She smiles

Princess : then you're definitely seeing me

Me : let's make it breakfast , lunch or dinner
whatever works for you my queen

This one is gone , such a blush and she's not
even hiding it

.

.

.

Tyler

Ledi is not well , as much as I hate that
we're leaving today I'm glad we are

Because I need her back so we can find out if she really is carrying that thing

And Sambulo might just become a problem to me , if they're really siblings

He's just going to side with her on this , meaning that I'm all on my own

Even knowing the dangers and all , he will still support her . Like any brother would , to their newly found sister

Me : I need to tell you something

Ledi : I don't want to hear it

She's laying down on the bed , while I'm packing her bag

Me : it's about Sambulo

Ledi : can you just let Princess do what she wants to do. So what if she loves the guy it's....

Me : what ?

Ledi : what what ?

Me : don't do that

Ledi : I don't owe you anything remember that ?

So she's gone back to this ruthless minion I don't like

Maybe this might just be what I need , it might work and I wouldn't even have to give anything

Me : he's your brother

And that gets me the attention I wasn't even looking for

Ledi : what ?

I can be as vile as she was , but I love this woman . The intention is not to hurt her

Ledi : Tyler what did you say ?

Me : that he's your brother

Ledi : isn't my brother dead

Me : Thato yes because I killed him , but Sambulo is somehow your brother

Ledi : well if he's my father son , I don't care because they also don't care about me

She gets up and walks to the door

Me : from both your parents

She just looks at me and walks out , okay
that didn't get me reason of craziness

Instead she walks out , this is tiring . No
what ?

.

.

.

Dikeledi

Tyler lied to me before , but I don't think
he's doing that right now

But I can't trust what he's saying as well , he might just be wanting me to focus on something else so I can forget what's happening with us

Princess : hey what's wrong ?

Leaving his hut I end up in hers

Me : your brother just said Sambulo is my brother

I sit down on the couch because I am tired me drained , I'm really loosing my strength. And having to pretend in front of everyone , it's a whole work on its self

Me : like that's crazy how can....

Her looks says otherwise , meaning she's saying the same thing that Tyler said

Me : Princess

Princess : I'm sorry but it is true

Me : what how ?

Princess : I held his palm and it's the same as yours

Me : that doesn't mean anything

Princess : you have the same blood , from both parents Ledi

Me : no , that can't be true . How can he be my brother and yet I never even knew about him ? It doesn't make sense , my mother doesn't have outside kids like my father

Voice : I was adopted

These people want me dead , and it's about to happen right now

Sambulo : I was adopted , my own mother left me in a hospital when I was just a few hours born

Me : yes your own mother not mine , she would never do that

I get up and pass him at the door , only he grabs my arm

My hand trails into his and somehow we both look at our palms , more like he looks at mine and I look at his

Me : no.....this can't be true...it just can't be

Sambulo : can I see something ?

I just look at him and already I'm crying , I'm tired of crying isn't it enough ?

Sambulo : please after this , I'll leave you alone if you're not my sister

He trails his hand to my shoulder , and I tense like hell

Princess : Sambulo don't

She says as he pulls my dress down my shoulder

Sambulo : it's okay

He says looking directly into my eyes , and I don't see a monster

I don't know what he's looking at or why but whatever he's seeing , makes his eyes glossy

Does he not take his t-shirt off because it's a bit tight unlike my dress . It's loose because I'm trying to hide my tummy

And what do you know , he has the same birth mark as me . Right at the same place and it's the same like identical

Sambulo : she left me a letter , I never got to read it because I'm still angry at her for leaving me . But going over it , I saw somewhere where it said this mark will make me find home if I ever seek it one day

I can't do this , I have a so not great track record with brother's

And I don't even know this Sambulo that well , something is saying embrace him

But another is like what if he's another Thato , he has the same blood as him after all

Me : I can't do this

I walk out and back to the one who started all this , I don't know what he was hoping to achieve just telling such a thing out of the blue

But I can't afford to stress this much , I have to think for the life and being of my baby

Me : can we just go ?

I'm tired of this place

Tyler : my mother wants to talk to us

Must we ?

.

.

.

Tyler

That plan failed miserably , I was right outside Princess's hut the whole time

And I guess I'm back to my first initial plan , one way or the other this thing she's carrying has to go

Mom : thank you for coming , I hear you're both leaving

Me : yes

Mom : well sit down

We both sit down

Mom : is everything well between you two?

I look at Ledi

Ledi : yes my queen

Mom : right now I need to know this , Ledi
are you pregnant ?

Shit , and this is all Asante . Princess would
never

Me : Asante is....

Mom : that's your aunt

Me : and this is not her business

Mom : Tyler

Me : no you told us that Ledi is to never fall pregnant until she's achieved in life

Mom : I'm glad you still remember that Tyler

Me : then what's this ?

Mom : I'm not fighting with you

Me : and I'm not fighting with you either

Mom : we know Asante is never wrong when....

Me : she's human she's allowed to make mistakes , I'm so done having this conversation . If she has something to say she can come say it to me

I get up

Ledi : I'm sorry my queen

Mom : it's okay baby , he's my son I know him and this can only mean he messed up

Me : whatever

I shake my head and walk out and what do you know this Asante is right at the door

Me : I don't appreciate you interfering into my business

Aunt Asante : that baby is killing that child Tyler , and you know what you planted inside of her

Me : then leave it to me

Aunt Asante : you don't want her innocent blood on your hands

She looks behind me and it's Ledi , she heard her

Aunt Asante : I'm sorry

And she walks away

Me : we're leaving now

She says nothing I walk to my hut and take our bags out

As if I'm not frustrated enough , and now everyone has be in this whole situation

.

.

INSERT 44

Princess

I really don't like the way my brother left ,
but in a way I understood him . Don't ask
me how , but it's unlike Tyler to just lash
out on everyone . More especially our

mother . But I feel like there's more than to what meets the eye , something huge is going on

And he's very much bothered , and having everyone in his business like that didn't help

I know maybe I'm one of the people who , contributed as well for asking him that question

But I held myself and didn't prey further , and I didn't even go as far as asking Ledi about it. I pray and hope whatever is going on , they'll get over it

As soon as it's not them breaking up , that one I cannot take . My friend has been through hell and back

And my brother has found love , his heart is very much taken care of there

I don't want either of them loosing their love for one another

A meeting was held after they left yesterday , and not necessarily to discuss them

But what happened , because quite a few people noticed an altercation between Aunty Asante and Tyler

And they felt he was wrong , as queen I
tried my level best to not be biased

But at the end of it all , I made my point and
everyone heard me

It's done Tyler owes no one no apology ,
and we all shall stay out of his issues

As a result , Sambulo and I didn't get to go
out yesterday

But I'm glad he stuck around until today ,
and we're out on that lunch . It's chilled
nothing too serious , he's not out here with
the queen but he's with Princess

Sambulo : so this is your home now ?

I nod smiling

Me : unfortunately

Sambulo : when will one ever get to see you? Or these ceremonies or functions are quite a regular thing with you ?

I laugh a bit , Sambulo is one funny character in his own way . If you pay the right attention to his words , you'll never miss it

Me : not in my kingdom no

Sambulo : now that's a bummer my queen ,
because this means it'll be quite a while
before I see you again

Okay that is not good at all , I love being
around him . I will admit , I enjoy his
company

Me : you can visit

Sambulo : not quite often as I would like

Me : and why not ?

He looks down and sighs first , rubbing his
hands together

Sambulo : I want to work on my relationship with my sister

Now this is beautiful , and I can surely wait with my silly obsession with him

Ledi needs his brother , and Sambulo also needs his sister right now

He's suffered a loss , and he can't be all alone . They're both just two broken souls

They need to heal each other

Me : that'sLedi will appreciate that very much

Sambulo : I don't know , the way she ran away from me yesterday

Me : it was shock , and if she thinks she offended you in anyhow . I tell you she's feeling bad right now

Sambulo : I hear you , and thank you for letting me vent on our date like this

He said Date , I didn't hear that alone right ?

Me : it's okay , I'm just glad we're spending time together

Sambulo : and that's with ?

I feel pushed to corner right now

Me : am I missing something ?

Sambulo : maybe

Me : I'm not aware

Sambulo : how about I like you Princess , and maybe even slightly love you . But I'm asking for a time to get my shit together , to deal with myself and everything going on around me . But not completely side-lining me , nor even friend zoning me . Just give me a bit of time , you're a queen . A Royal blue blood I can respect that , but you know

I'm a commoner . Do I even stand a chance with you ?

I want to scream right now , because he's saying all this staring right into my eyes

Me : I....I like you very much as well

And I have no more words

Sambulo : are you saying you're giving me a chance to be your boyfriend ?

Me : the chance is all yours

Sambulo : I can kiss you right now , but won't these people want to have me charged for kissing their queen in public ?

I laugh because he's just being silly right now

I don't know what the law or rule of Batlokoa say , about the queen dating

So if there's anything against it , I'll cross that bridge when I get there

- .
- .
- .

Tyler

I swallowed that pride , threw that ego out
the window

And here I am , down on my knees begging
Ledi to go see a doctor

After we got back a few days ago , she
wasn't herself at all . And I started
regretting even telling her about Sambulo

She's become so weak and pale , it's like
there's no life left inside of her

She was kicking me out , but I stayed
outside the door until she opened for me

The whole I'm a man thing won't work for me right now , I need to humble myself

Maybe if she can get to a doctor , she will see how dangerous this is for her

And she'll let me find a solution to this , she's being a mother right now

Something me as a man or a guy will never understand

That's why I'm here begging her like this on my knees , I may seem weak right now . But this woman right here is my everything , I don't want life without her

So being a man can wait a bit for me , right
now I'm a human being with no egos and
preferences

Ledi : Tyler get up

She's laying in bed , but she looks so bad

Me : all I'm asking is that you see a doctor

It's clear she's carrying something , we need
to know and see this . For her sake

Me : please that's all I'm asking , see a
doctor . You cannot deny the fact that
you're not well right now

She looks down

Me : I can't have....I'm not saying much just a doctor's visit and I'll do whatever you want

She seems to be in thought for a while , and I hope this works

Ledi : fine , but after it please leave me alone

Me : thank you

I get up and make a call , Crane is one of my men . But he's also a qualified doctor

He knows about me , so it shouldn't be a problem going to him

Crane : boss man

Me : I'm coming to see you a few

Crane : alright , I'll be ready

I drop the call

Me : the doctor is willing to see us right now

Ledi : there's no use delaying

She gets off the bed and it takes her 4 times
the actual time she does it when she's her
strong self

.

.

.

Dikeledi

That sight of him on his knees begging me
just for this , broke things for me . And sure
put some into perspective , and I see and
get where he's coming from

But I need him to meet me halfway as well ,
I need for him to understand

And to see where I'm coming from as well ,
to me this a baby . My very own baby

I'm scared I won't lie , to think in almost
four weeks varsity starts and I look this way

It's like I'm dying , and I do look pale . So I
can believe that the baby really is sucking
my blood

That's one scary thought , and it's only
human that it gives me fear

Crane : are you ready ?

Tyler already did the introductions

Me : yes

My tummy is out there , it's like every second it's growing and not a small thing

Crane : okay let's see

He pours the gel on my stomach , and his eyes wander around . You can hear the heart beat it's one strong and powerful sound ever , somehow I find myself smiling through this

Crane : wow this is nothing like I've ever seen before

He shouldn't go there as well

Me : is my baby okay ?

Crane : more than okay , you're just 6 weeks pregnant . But in just 10 weeks this baby would have fully developed into a human being

The look I give him , only because I want to see his reaction . And he doesn't anger me at all , he's the same as he was when we met

Me : so everything is okay with the baby ?

Crane : everything is perfect with the baby ,
just not you . I'm very worried and
concerned , your blood is dropping like ...

Me : is there nothing else ?

He looks at us both

Tyler : excuse us Crane

With that being said he walks out , I reach
for the tissue to wipe the gel off my
stomach

Tyler : the more it's inside of your , the more you're dying

Me : this is my baby Tyler

He's hurt and right now I do feel his pain , and maybe I am being selfish

Me : I can't

Tyler : you have to abort , you still have 4 more weeks . You won't make it to 10 weeks

Me : this is my baby Tyler

Tyler : it's not a baby , but a monster that's slowly killing you

Me : I...I can't I'm sorry

Tyler : sweetheart

And I break down crying

Me : what if this is my lady baby , my one and only . What if I don't have any more kids ? Please don't make me do this

I'm crying now , my heart is broken no lies

Me : I can't Tyler

He nods getting up

Tyler : then I'm afraid , I can't watch you allowing it to do this to you . I can't lose you

Me : how about you make me lose this child, and you'll loose me ?

He sighs

Me : I'm not killing my child , we best stay away from each other . If you want me out of your house , I'll leave

Tyler : you stay

He walks out , and I break down even worse

Him wanting me to kill this child breaks us ,
I don't want to lie and involve factors that
don't even matter

Our separation is because of this baby , I'll
rather die than kill my child

I've already lost the love of my life , the
man who owns my heart

What's my death ? This baby will leave ,
even if it means he or she kills me

.

.

Sambulo

I got back yesterday , only because I wanted to spend some more with Princess

And it was great and all that , and just maybe I stand a chance to being in love and committed to one woman

As much as she's out of my league , she's the one I want . And I'm prepared to grovel if I have to

I walk into the house and a messed up Tyler passes me by

Me : hey , what's wrong ?

His eyes are that of the golden god , so many questions in my head . Is this fury all directed at me or what ? Maybe he knows already about his sister and me.

Tyler : go talk to your sister , knock some sense into her head

He gets into his car and leaves , okay that has me worried . I run inside meeting up with Crane

Crane : you can't....

He's too late I've already passed him and
I'm in the room where she's at

Her cry breaks my heart , he's hurting and
so is Tyler . Which says to me he's not the
one who hurt her . And nor is she the one
who has hurt him , something is going on
and hitting them both

Me : Nana (baby)

She looks at me she the tears keep falling ,
and now she cries aloud a bit

I get on the bed and hug her she doesn't push me , which gives me the permission to hug her even tighter

Only the bump on her belly catches my attention , and right now I don't want to believe it

Me : shhhh it's okay

She shakes her head

Ledi : it's not....okay

She's hurting me just by crying , and I can only imagine how much is Tyler hurting

Me : are you expecting ?

She doesn't answer me , it's silly of me to ask but I need to know what happened between them

Ledi : he...wants me...to abort....I can't do that....I can't

Fuck , this is messed up . Knowing Tyler his reason to want this is very much so justified

But this is my sister , and right now I don't know what is what . But I'm taking her side either way , Tyler and I we will talk and see how we can help each other on this

And she doesn't need to know about that ,
all she needs to know is that me her brother
supports her

Tyler is a man he won't need any validation
from me

Me : let's go home

I'll rather take her with to my house , than
leave her here alone . Or for her to be in his
house alone

Already he was in Camps Bay , so surely
they're still living separate . And she doesn't
need any of that right now

I carry her out to my car , and as soon as I drive out I think she'll be better off at my parents place

They never sold the house when they moved to PE , we go there sometimes

But after my mother's death my father moved down here to clear his head

Being with him would be better than us just being alone in my house

We arrive and find him in the lounge watching TV , you can imagine the look he's giving me right now

Walking in with a clearly sick girl like this

Me : hi dad

Dad : son

Me : uhm this is my sister Dikeledi , you can just call her Ledi

He knows about this siblings business , because we got to talk about it a bit after the funeral

Dad : Ledi welcome home

She just smiles clearly you can tell she's uncomfortable , but I have Tyler on speed dial if anything goes anyhow

Dad : Sambulo what's wrong ?

Me : can I put her to bed and we'll talk

He nods , I take her to one of the rooms downstairs . To avoid making her use the stairs

She gets into bed , but the tears are back from time to time

Me : call if you need anything

She nods and I walk out , I text Tyler telling him she's with me . And I'll come see him when she's better so we can talk about this

Dad : that's your biological sister ?

Me : yes , and I know how this looks like . We recently just met right in Botswana , we don't know each other that well . But right now I feel like she needs me dad

Dad : she didn't look good

Me : she's not good , and she's pregnant

Dad : she's your sister son , which makes her family

That his way to say she can stay , and I can be a brother to her

Me : thank you dad

He nods , and now I have a real concern .
Clearly this child is Tyler's baby

My question is Tyler being who and what he is , does he make normal babies ?

.

.

.

THREE WEEKS LATER

INSERT 45

Sambulo

It's been quite a few rough week's since my sister moved in with us

And I haven't had quite a time to talk to her, because I don't want to push her too hard

My father is very much worried about her , she's lost weight immersive

She's gone like 2 sizes down her normal size, and that's a real worry

She has varsity and she's only been able to go for orientation , and only three lectures. Her health is a worry to us , and I'm not ready to loose her when I've just found her

I settle on the bed next to her , I've made her something to eat . But you'd swear she doesn't eat

Me : how are you holding up ?

She shakes her head

Ledi : I'm not good at all , thank you for doing this taking me in like this . And taking care of me

It's a difficulty to breathe now , and I'm worried she looks like she can die any day now . I try to touch her hand

And she tenses up , reminds me of what happened in Botswana . She's been abused, I know a victim of abuse from afar

Me : I will never hurt you

Ledi : I'm sorry , it...it's was Thato

And there it is

Ledi : I.....after mom passed away there was no one to take me in . Her family wanted nothing to do with us , and our father is married and happy with his other family . His family wants nothing to do with us as well , they say we're not his kids . All because he left our mother for another

woman . Thato was my only option , and I didn't mind moving in with him and his wife Rose . Only soon after moving in with them he started seeing me more than as a sister , and he used me as tool to pleasure him . It became a regular thing , when I reused I'd get beatings . And in the end he would still rape me . I'm sorry for being like this , I just don't have the best experiences with brother's .

Me : can you hug me ?

She laughs through her tears

Ledi : not you too

Me : me too ?

Ledi : after what I went through , you can imagine my fear of men . So this is how Tyler got me to be comfortable with him , by making me initiate the touches . Only he said it nicer than you did

Me : aha

We laugh , she brings her head to my chest . I cover her back , and lay my hand over her shoulder

Me : I'm sorry you went through what you went through , and I wasn't there to protect

you . But now I'll never let anyone hurt you ever again

Ledi : right now I'm the one person that's hurting herself , all because I refused to abort

Me : why does he want you to abort ?

I've never asked all this

Ledi : I love Tyler so much , and I'm willing to forget the lies and everything so we can be okay . But having to abort my baby that one I cannot do

I know Tyler , he would never say abort without any valid reasons

Ledi : how well do you know your friend ?

Me : like the back of my hand

Ledi : he told me everything about himself

Me : everything ?

She nods

Me : like everything ?

She giggles

Ledi : yes everything like all of it

Me : wait like him being the Mafia leader ?

If he didn't tell her that I can always deny it,
and say I wanted to see her reaction

Ledi : being the cartel what not

We look at each other

Us : the golden god

Fuck !

Me : so if you know all this , how are you pregnant with is baby ?

Ledi : here I am , the baby is what's making me sick . That's why he wants me to abort , but I can never do that

It's painful seeing my sister cry , and I now know Tyler means well

Me : it's okay

Ledi : how , when he said I will die as soon as the baby is born ?

Me : we'll figure something out

I cuddle her for a while , until she's calmed down

Me : now please get some rest and I'll come check on you later

I tuck her in , and walk out

.

.

.

Tyler

When the tough gets going , I bury myself in work . I've done more jobs in just 4 weeks , something I've never done before

This is me trying not to over think the whole Ledi situation

She's still adamant to not aborting even now , and it'll be quite useless because now that thing can be born any day

And knowing that it's birth is her death , that alone kills me

I haven't talked to her in a while , I'm really honouring her wanting space from me

It's not like not like I haven't tried to talk to her , but I always stop myself before the phone even rings

Sambulo : thank you for coming

He pulls a chair and it's down , I just nod .
He called and asked to meet

Sambulo : I hear you've been a very busy man

Me : someone has to

Sambulo : right , listen Ledi told me about your situation

Me : about it all ?

Sambulo : yes

Okay

Sambulo : I don't want to believe that
there's nothing we can do for her right now

What can we possibly do ?

Me : how is she ?

Sambulo : very bad

I shake my head

Me : if only she listened to me , none of this would be happening right now . That thing will kill her

Sambulo : you know she's will to forgive and forget , if only you can tone down the hate on the baby . She said you wanting to her to get rid of it , it's the only thing keeping you separate right now

Me : her own words ?

Sambulo : yeah

So accepting things as they are , it's the only barrier between us now ?

But what happens when she dies , am I expected to love that baby as she says it's a baby ?

Sambulo : she's lost weight so bad

Me : that thing is feeding off her blood
Sambulo

Sambulo : okay wellwait

He looks around

Sambulo : you feed off blood , what if we were to give her the blood

Me : you don't think I haven't thought about that ?

Sambulo : then let's do it

Me : are you crazy ?

Sambulo : no she wants to keep the baby fine , but to do so she has to consume the blood her choice

Me : right

Sambulo : and of course , you're the one who has to tell her that

Me : why not you ?

Sambulo : I'm her brother , I can't side with you

Me : let me break it down to you , the reason why I haven't given her the blood there's two things good or bad . It's either it'll that thing , and it'll stop feeding on her . Or it will intensify the thirst of it , which will be more dangerous even for her . She wouldn't survive a week

Sambulo : shit

Me : exactly

Sambulo : but it's worth a try

Me : it's too risky

Sambulo : let's just try

I don't know about this

Voice : I'll see you soon Oceans , I gave you
enough time but you wasted it

It's Khoza passing our table

Sambulo : leave him , I'll see you around

He gets up

Me : I'm coming with you

We both walk out heading to our cars , and we drive out to the cold room first . Getting those packs of blood

Then we drive to his home , arriving we find his father in the garden

We greet exchange a few words and we walk inside the house

Sambulo : if she goes crazy , you're leaving

Me : really ?

Sambulo : my sister over you ndoda (man)

I can't believe this , but I did say that he will support her no matter what

Sambulo : this will work fine

He says taking a cute cup

Me : it's still blood

Sambulo : shut up

We walk to her room , and she's in bed .
You can hardly even see that it's her

Sambulo : Nana (baby)

Me : why do you call her that ?

Sambulo : really?

Ledi : what's with the noise ?

We walk in further , and she sits up . The
belly is all out there , but she's taken a
knock and you can see it

Sambulo : he can leave if you want him gone

Ledi : don't...be silly

It goes quite that it actually gets awkward

Sambulo : he came up with a plan to maybe help you

So I did ? He's really selling me off to his sister

Ledi : oh

Sambulo : if you don't like it its okay

Sambulo is really a dick

Sambulo : he suggested that you maybe
drink blood

And she looks at me , I just stare at her .

Ledi : will I be better ?

Me : I don't know maybe , but it can also ...

Sambulo : be nice

I'm starting to hate him

Me : it can increase the thirst of the baby ,
it'll be uncontrollable and you won't survive
that

Ledi : but it can also help make me better

Me : not better per se , but the baby will
feed on the blood you consume and not
yours

Ledi : is that it ?

She points to the cup

Sambulo : yeah

Ledi : let me try it

He hands her the cup , and it's a struggle a first . But once she closes her eyes and she drinks down the cup , she makes it look so easy

Problem it's bringing me thirst

Sambulo : please control yourself

And I'm changing slowly , my eyes are already a mess

Me : don't...worry

I take the change , but my eyes that's
another story I can't turn them back

Ledi : it's working

We both look at her and she still looks the
same

Ledi : come feel this

She lifts her dress exposing her tummy , and
it's so normal like any another

This thing is kicking like crazy in here , and
they seem to taken by it with Sambulo

Me : does it not hurt? The kicks I mean

Ledi : sometimes

I nod , I don't get why she had to endure all of this

My phone rings , and it's a number I don't recognise at all

Me : I have to take this

They both nod , I walk out the room answering the call

.

.

INSERT 45

Prince

Being back at school is just as I expected , nothing much exciting about him . Other than having me being the talk , it's annoying honestly but I'll get over it eventually

Lira and I we're still pushing , and I really didn't think we would be something solid

But there's just something about that girl , and she's definitely worth knowing

Zamo and I we're still tight as ever , although some friends ditched me because now I'm back again in high school repeating a grade

But this is my life and my future , so anyone who has anything to say can go on and say it I don't give a fuck . At home things are great in a way , we're all out there minding our business during the day

And at night we're all together , as a family
and being there for one another

I've come a long way , I really do think that
I've grown for the better so far . And I hope
to grow some more

Dad : let's have a word

He says passing and I follow him

Dad : how are you holding up ?

Me : can't complain my king

He nods

Dad : I must say you've been doing very well as of late , and I'm very much impressed with your progress . Now I can finally say I see the light at the end of the tunnel

I chuckle a bit

Dad : your sister is making me very proud as queen in her kingdom , and without comparing . You're still far from getting there , but Manzini I'm putting my faith in you . To keep this kingdom grounded and more stronger than now , you still have a long way . But I have no doubt you'll get there , in due time . But bare this in mind , when it's said be a man be strong . It doesn't mean be rude or arrogant about that , just know your place and know other

people's places as well . Life works better in that way , when everyone knows their place and keeps to it . You'll make a great king one day , but always know you fail to it my boy you're not irreplaceable . I spilled blood to have this kingdom back to oManzini , I will not lay still nor keep quite when it's being ruined . Because that fight would have been all for nothing , the blood spilled would all be in vain . So far you're doing good , and I can acknowledge that . Keep it up

And he leaves me , so much for being sentimental . My father is something else. But I'm left smiling all to myself because I'm happy , his words may have seemed and sounded like nothing

But it was everything and more to me ,
maybe I do have a chance of being a great
king someday after all

It took some harsh and hard love , a few
beatings and witnessing of some disturbing
things

But it was all worth it , to lead to a great
future ahead

-
-
-

Dikeledi

Tyler left yesterday and never came back again , and to be honest I wanted him to come back

But I guess I have no right to wish for any of that since I'm the one who broke things off with him

It was really good to see home , after such a long time . But I still appreciate that he kept his distance

I still love Tyler , and I wish things were different . But they're not and there's nothing we can do about it

As long as he still insists in this baby being killed , there's no way there'll be a me and him

But I'm glad that I have them with my brother , it even feels somehow to say my brother and not feel any lump on my throat

As much as the blood thing was so disgusting , it's helping me and I can feel it

But it still doesn't say I'm going to live and make it , I can still die after giving birth

I had a few papers to go through , and now I'm done . And I'm out of bed today

Sambulo : looking good

Me : don't play with me

I can never thank him and his father enough
for what they've done for me

Sambulo : what's wrong ?

Me : I need to ask you something very
selfish

Sambulo : if you're asking it , consider it
done

I smile

Me : please promise me that you will take care of my child

Sambulo : Nana (baby)

Me : please promise me , that my baby will not become an orphan wena o le teng (while you're here)

He gets off the chair and hugs me , I break down already I'm crying . Thinking how my baby will be left all alone

Me : already I have no family Sambulo please , you're all I got . Watch my baby for me please

Voice : he or she will never be an orphan
ngikhona mina (while I'm here)

I pull away from Sambulo , and she breaks
down coming to hug me

Me : I'm sorry

Princess : no , I'm sorry baby you don't
deserve any of this . But I'm here now

One more person who will not be against
me , I know I may be crazy , for choosing
this baby . But if I went ahead with the
abortion , and only to find out this was my
only baby . I was going to live with that
regret for the rest of my life

I just couldn't

.

.

.

Princess

This is a mess , and as they're telling me all
this I feel so bad

Why must I always arrive late to help her ,
she's going through a lot

It's like history is repeating itself again , but I'm glad I got to come and be here

The shocking needs of my brother , I can't believe this . But I should know nothing is ought to shock me with Tyler anymore

As much as they didn't tell me anything deeper about the situation , but the fact that the baby is hurting Ledi says a lot

And it cannot be a or normal human being baby , because she's now consuming blood to keep alive . But for how long ?

Ledi : did he tell you ?

She means her brother

Me : no

Ledi : then how did you know I needed you again ?

Me : your mother

She looks down

Ledi : I disappointed everyone , what is your mother going....

Me : hey don't do this , she's not perfect either she made mistakes

Ledi : she didn't want this for me

Me : and that's all good , but it's done now .
You need support baby and not judgement ,
yes my mother will be disappointed but she
will be here for your baby

She nods

Ledi : I pray it's a boy

Me : why ?

Ledi : I don't know , but I just have that
need

Okay I'm not understanding this right now ,
and I feel like this is too deep . It's a cry

Sambulo comes in and he's messed up so
not himself at all

Ledi : what's wrong ?

Sambulo : I need to go somewhere right
now , please watch her for me

He says to me

Ledi : why , where are you going ?

She's starting to panic now , Sambulo wants to hold on to whatever this is . I beg him with my eyes

Sambulo : Tyler has need arrested

Okay this is enough now , how much more can Ledi take

Hasn't it been enough the tears she has cried

Me : what happened ?

Sambulo : I don't know I need to go see him
I...

Ledi : take me to him now

Says a person who can hardly even walk

Me : Ledi

Ledi : Sambulo I said now

Sambulo : I can't take you to a police station
I...

Ledi : should I ask someone else to do it ?

Okay she's not kidding and I don't like this
idea , she needs to stress she doesn't need
this

INSERT 47

Tyler

Talk about being caught off guard , and Khoza thinks he's won . I get a call that one of my houses is on fire , I get there and it's burning alright

Suddenly there's cops everywhere , and out of nowhere they come out with stacks of dirty cash

Drugs and black diamonds , and this idiot says he's got me

Boom just like that I'm arrested , at least he will not feel like a failure when I walk out of here today

Because I spent a night in jail , that should count for something

The door opens and he walks in , with Sambulo and Ledi

Me : do you have a death wish ?

Sambulo : don't go off at me , she didn't want to hear any of it

Me : and you....

Ledi : can you...just stop

Her voice is fading , how can Sambulo bring her here to see me like this ? And in her situation

Khoza : I will leave you , and I hope when I come back you have what I want

Me : fuck off , you already put me here so surely you have what you want

He walks out

Sambulo : can you calm down ?

Me : and you follow him , and Sambulo you're going to pay for bringing her here

Sambulo : but....

Me : get out

I roar at him and he looks at Ledi and walks out

Ledi : it's my...fault I'm sorry

Me : sweetheart please sit down

I help her sit down

Ledi : I'm ...sorry

I don't care what is what , Sambulo is ought to know better

Me : you shouldn't have come here , this is not healthy for you

Ledi : at this point nothing is healthy for me,

can we just agree on that . I'm dying and
I've made peace with it

Me : sweetheart stop

She reaches out for my hand , her tears fall
on the small table top

Ledi : I know you think it's just a thing....you
don't want it...but it's our baby to me . I'm
sorry I've been this selfishbut I hope
you...forgive me someday. I love you...I
never stopped loving you...and I'm sorry

Her hands becomes very weak , I lift my
eyes and she's out of it . I'm quick to get up
and catch her before she reaches the floor

Me : not today

The door opens and it's Sambulo along with Khoza

Sambulo : we need to leave

Khoza pulls me off from her , and with one push he makes impact with the wall falling down

Me : I need to get out of here

Sambulo : don't break out , don't run . I'll make sure you're out in an hour , the police minister is already on his way

I was so ready to change , and walk my way out of here . But he's making better sense

Me : go , make sure she lives

Sambulo : what you're asking me is hard , but I'll try

He picks her up and runs out with her , who do I ask help from right now ?

I don't even know how to pray where do I even begin , what do I say ?

I'm fighting my tears not to fall , and they're burning my eyes so bad

Voice : Tears are also prayers

I don't know this voice , and it's not here so
it's not from anyone in this in the flesh like
in human form

I lift my eyes , and it's a figure of a woman .
She looks a bit like Ledi

Her : don't leave my child when she needs
you the most please , remember how you
first met . Is this how you end it , you here
and her there dying alone ? You saved her
life that's how you met her , please now
save it and get to keep her .

And she disappears

Voice : remember Tears are also prayers

And the damn tears do the work , but it's annoying will they save Ledi ?

Will whoever is hearing and answering prayers , hear and answer this one ?

How can she die and I have no means to save her , is it because I'm the cause of her death ?

It started ngesililo , must it end ngaso futhi?
(With a cry , with it again)

.

.

Princess

I don't know who are these dodgy guys here, but they seem to know what they're doing . They have Ledi stabilised right now , we're hopeful she can hold on for a while. Sambulo scared me to hell when he walked in here with her in his hands .

I cried for a while not knowing what to do , because I thought maybe this was it she was gone

Sambulo : my queen

I smile looking at him , he means it as the queen of his life . Not queen as I am

Me : I'm scared baby

He sits down and holds me , I cry on his chest already his t-shirt is stained with my tears from earlier on

Sambulo : honour your promise to her , and she'll be at peace

Me : I don't want to lose Ledi yet , I still want to gossip about you with her . I want

to throw tantrums when you annoy me ,
and tell her how I hate her handsome
brother . She promised to visit me in
Botswana , she can't only come once and
that's it . This is not how it's supposed to
end , Tyler is supposed to marry her . She
deserves to be called his wife , baby this
can't be it

My heart is heavy and it's painful , this
hurts. And I feel it physically , it means
emotionally I'm a mess

Sambulo : I'm sorry

He doesn't know what to say , because he's
also dealing with his own pain and all

He just found his sister and the love he holds for her is something priceless . This is not fair , she endured abuse from one brother . Why is she being denied love and happiness from another ?

Sambulo is what Ledi needed , and now she won't get to know this kind of love . It's just not fair

Me : are you going to be a parent with me ?

He chuckles , and his own tear drops on my arm

Sambulo : yes , I'll be a parent with you my queen

Me : that's good , very good . Now you have to move to Botswana or we can co-parent from this distance ?

Sambulo : whatever the queen wants , the queen gets

I laugh , a scream from the room she's in gets us both rushing in

Sambulo : what's going on ?

She's screaming and seems to be in a lot of pain

Ledi : take it....outtttt

I feel like this is me right now , and it pains me that it's her

Sambulo : she's ready

I walk it only because I can't bare to watch her give birth only to die after that I just can't

- .
- .
- .

Sambulo

I feel Princess right now , and if I had my way as well I would go out as well . But I have to be strong for my sister , I can't leave her alone

Ledi : I...can't...hold...on please take....

She cries , she's even sweating it's really bad . And worse she doesn't have the energy nor the strength for this

Crane : she has to push now

I nod , and it's like I'm giving a go ahead from my sister to die . How am I ever going to forget this moment right now ?

Crane : okay I need you to give me a push
on the count of three

I hold her hands , she hasn't stopped crying.
I can't stand this , but for her sake I have to
be strong

Crane : are you ready ?

She nods

Crane : okay , one , two...

Voice : stop

He says bursting in through the door , the relief I have right now . Minister sure took his time

Makes me wonder why we paying him if he can't do things in seconds

Crane : we have to...

Tyler : I said stop , and get ready to operate on her

Crane : Oceans ...

Tyler : just do it

He doesn't need to be told twice

Tyler : sweetheart I'm here

Ledi : TyI can't....it's too... painful

When she lets a scream , it pierces one's heart . You can't help but feel it as well

Tyler : hold on just a few more minutes , you and our baby will be fine . Please hold on , do it for our baby . We both can't lose you , what do I know about raising babies ?

Ledi : our ...baby ?

She's taken aback by that , and I wonder why the sudden change from this one

Tyler : yes I was a fool , I know that . But this is our baby either way

She nods still crying , and Crane runs in again

Crane : we're ready

Me : I hope this works

He said it's to save both of them , so I hope it really does . We stand and watch as they get busy with her

And unfortunately they can't even drug her

Me : what happened ?

Tyler : I had a moment and learnt that tears are also prayers

Me : what the hell ?

Tyler : you're still a child you won't get it

Me : how does that help her ?

Tyler : she's not going to push the baby , which is what was going to make her loose

the less blood she has on . This way chances are minimised of more blood being lost .

Me : but she still lacks blood

Tyler : I'm going to give her a transfusion

Me : Tyler no....

Am I not too late , as the baby is taken out and he cries he's already cut his wrist and on her mouth with it

My own sister is sucking that disgusting blood of his for dear life , and the more he's changing into the golden god

Crane : clean the baby , we have to close her now

I take my nephew and he's one big baby . So chubby and all , and to think he's this chubby because he was busy finishing my sister

.

.

.

Dikeledi

I come to , and I see I'm in the room I usually use . And I'm in bed

I hear soft giggles and laughter , and
someone is holding my hand

I know this touch , I turn my head and it's
him . He has his head bowed he doesn't
even seen me

I turn to the other side and the two are
busy playing happy families with my son

I don't know if it's a boy or girl , but I'm
really hoping it's a boy

My very on TJ , yes I know how that looks
and sounds like . But Tyler was never out of
order

He wanted to save me , I wanted my baby .
But in the end he saved us both

So his son deserves to be his very own Tyler
Junior

Me : pleasetell me he's a son ?

They both look at me smiling , and they
walk towards me . Sambulo is the one
holding the baby

Princess : and you're back , I was really
looking forward to going a mother

They laugh , I can't even laugh because it's painful down there on my lower stomach

Me : go make your own sis

Sambulo : you want to be an aunt already ?

Me : I won't mind

Voice : don't dare get my sister pregnant boy

Ah the arrogance , where does he get the nerve ?

Sambulo : you got my sister pregnant

Princess : and it's not a competition so let's leave the parents alone

She helps me sit up straight , and Sambulo gives me the baby and what do you know

Me : my very own TJ

Princess : you did not ?

Me : I wasn't going to name him PJ

They laugh and he opens his eyes , like Tyler ruined my baby . He's his exact replica , and worse he has those red orange fiery eyes

Princess : I give up

Sambulo : you have your own junior now ,
you're a man

See them shaking hands , and the two walk
out . My baby sucks on his thumb

Me : you love good , no wonder you
finished me

I take my breast out and he sucks , like he
hasn't ate in months

Me : he's just a baby

Tears are streaming down my face

Me : he's a baby Tyler , our own baby . Not
it not a thing but a baby look at him

He gets up and walks to my other side ,
sitting right next to me

Tyler : he is , I'm so sorry . I should have
done better tried better but....

Me : you did better when it mattered the
most , had you not walked in when you did I
wouldn't be here . Had you not fed me your
disgusting bitter blood...

He chuckles and I find myself laughing

Me : it would be over for me , but here I am. And TJ is here

He kisses top of my head , and plays with his cheek

And he holds his father's finger , it's just one cute thing to notice

Me : I cried way too many tears , and it ends here . No more I am done , I prayed and thought no one heard . I even ran out of words to say when praying , I ended up just crying . And it felt useless , because I didn't utter any words . But seems like it

worked , like the one prayer has been answered .

I look at our son , and I see just one person who saved me from the beginning until now. His father . I look at him and he's looking right at us , he wipes my tear with his thumb

Me : it's like God knew I need his love and this happiness . That's what you have given me through him , he's the healing of all those years of tears and pain

We both look at him , and he's looking at us like he can see us . And he's just the most perfect thing ever

Tyler : tears are also prayers

The most sane and beautiful thing I've ever heard him say since we've been through this storm

Tears have been answered , and everything and anything and questions that will follow later . I guess they'll be answered as well

.

.

.

.

THE END